

Daniel Duncan McArthur

Mormon Pioneer

*Compiled by*

RUDGER M. MCARTHUR

1990



DANIEL DUNCAN McARTHUR

April 8, 1820 - June 3, 1908

# CONTENTS

Acknowledgements .....	ii
Autobiography .....	1
Capt'n Dan's Handcarts to Utah .....	131
Activities in Northern Utah .....	149
The Dixie Experience .....	155
Last Will and Testament .....	169
Stories and Quotes .....	173
Blessings .....	191

## ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

For many years we have listened to and told stories about Daniel Duncan McArthur and for many years I have had an interest in compiling the stories and other information available from various sources.

One document that interested me most was an autobiography that was at the home of Aunt Eugenia Coates. It was always fun to go and visit at her home and read this family history. My father, Wilford Woodruff McArthur told stories, Uncle Rone told stories, Uncle Art told stories, Aunt Eugenia told stories; all about the same incidents, but with a little different point of view.

Because of the wide range of experiences of Grandfather Daniel Duncan McArthur, it became evident that no one source of information was well enough established to tell his story. The base for compilation of information has been made possible through the cooperation of several historical societies, libraries and research centers around the country.

A call was sent out to the McArthur descendants and friends and much delightful information has been received from many sources.

A special thanks goes to Daniel Duncan McArthur for the 'paper trail' that he left in journals, diaries, letters, etc., without which this compilation would not have been possible. My sister, Enid Heaton, and the McArthur cousins; Annie Jennings, Nellie Gubler, Jessie Jensen and Vere and Evelyn McMullin (to name a few) have been most helpful. Wife, Erma, has spent endless hours proofing, editing and, under sometimes unfavorable circumstances, helping this publication mature and be published. Last, but in no way least, son Richard and his wife Ellen who

have edited, typed and completed much of the work to make this publication ready for the printer.

This publication should in no way be considered the last word on the life of Daniel Duncan McArthur. It is only the beginning. As you read the story and recall things that you have heard, write you recollections and send them to the DANIEL DUNCAN McARTHUR FAMILY ORGANIZATION, 791 East Morningside Drive, St. George, Utah, 84770, where a file is being kept in preparation to adding additional information to the record before the next Reunion scheduled for June 1995.

Hope you have as much fun reading this compilation as I have had in researching and putting the information together.

Rudger M. McArthur

# **AUTOBIOGRAPHY**



Daniel D. McArthur was Born on the  
 8<sup>th</sup> of April 1820 in the Town of Holland  
 Erie County N. Y. and received the  
 Gospel of Christ when he was <sup>years old</sup> twelve ~~years~~  
 (his heart) and when he was 16 years  
 old he Emigrated with his Parents  
 to Kirtland a gathering place for the  
 in the state of Ohio Geoga County and  
 left Kirtland in June 1838 with his  
 Parents and took up our journey <sup>to</sup>  
 the state of Missouri and while on our  
 journey we crossed the Mississippi <sup>River</sup>  
 on the 20<sup>th</sup> day of September at Lusanna  
 Pike Co and camped that night one mile  
 west of that city and early on the <sup>next</sup>  
 morning of September the 21<sup>st</sup> 1838 I was  
 first Baptized in to the Church of  
 Jesus Christ of latter day Saints by  
 Elder Henry Harrison who was  
 one of the first seven Presidents of over  
 all the organized Quorums of Seventies  
 and I can say in the fear of my God that  
 I never have had the least doubt cross  
 my mind or to the truthfulness of the word  
 or as to Joseph Smiths being a true Prophet of  
 God I D D McArthur

Daniel D. McArthur was Born on the  
 8th of April 1820 in the Town of Holland  
 Erie County N. Y. and received the  
 Gospel of Christ when he was twelve years old (in  
 his heart) and when he was 16 years  
 old he Emigrated with his Parents  
 to Kirtland a gathering place for the Saints  
 in the State of Ohio Geoga County and  
 left Kirtland in June 1838 with his  
 Parents and took up our journey for  
 the State of Missouri and while on our  
 journey we crossed the Mississippi River on  
 the 20th day of September at Lusanna  
 Pike Co. and camped that night one mile  
 west of that city and Early on the next mor-  
 -ning of September the 21st 1838 I was  
 first Bapptized in to the Church of  
 Jesus Christ of latter day Saints by  
 Elder Henry Harrison who was  
 one of the first Seven Presidents of over  
 all the organized Quoroms of Seventies  
 and I can say in the fear of my God that  
 I never have had the least dought cross  
 my mind as to the truthfulness of the word  
 or as to Joseph Smiths being a true Prophet of  
 God.

D. D. McArthur

Mr Daniel D McArthur Son of  
 Duncan and Susan McArthur was  
 Born April the 8<sup>th</sup> 1820 in the Town of  
 Holland Erie Co- State of New York  
 on Cosenover Creek under or at the Base  
 of a large Hill which was one Mille to  
 its Summit—cauld by the Inhabitanice  
 Vermont Hill. (My Father was born in the  
 state of N. H. Mother in the state of Vermont)  
 When I was one year old my Parents  
 Sould out and in Company with my  
 Grand-Father McKeen and his Family  
 Who was my Mothers Father and Folks  
 Moved to the state of Pencilvania Scrub  
 Grass Co— on the Allagany River 50  
 Miles above Pitsburgh Bought a  
 Farm and Resided there till the Fall  
 of 1825 and then in Company with  
 my Grand Father McKeen sould  
 out again and Removed Back to the  
 state of New York Erie Co Town  
 of Holland Bought a Farm and  
 went as he said Preparing to Reside  
 this place during his Life

Mr. Daniel D. McArthur Son of  
 Duncan and Susan McArthur was  
 Born April the 8th 1820 in the Town of  
 Holland Erie Co-State of New York  
 of Cosenover Creek under or at the Base  
 of a large Hill which was one mille to  
 its Summit cauld by the Inhabitanice  
 Vermont Hill. (My Father was born in the  
 State of N.H. Mother in the State of Vermont).  
 When I was one year old My parrents  
 Sould out and in Company with my  
 Grand-Father McKeen and his Family  
 Who was my Mothers Father and Folks  
 Moved to the State of Pencilvania Scrub  
 Grass Co. on the Allagany River 50  
 Miles above Pitsburgh. Bought a  
 Farm and Resided there till the Fall  
 of 1825 and then in Company with  
 my Grand Father McKeen sould  
 out again and removed back to the  
 State of New York Erie Co. Town  
 of Holland Bought a Farm and  
 went as he said Preparing to Reside  
 on this place during his life



and things were in a prospering condition with him till the Winter of 1829 when he was seized with the Rheumatism which caused his Right Hip to be drawn out of joint and confined him to his Bed the Remainder of the winter and in the Spring when he got so that he could rise from his Bed he was obliged to use Crutches to get about with and could not do much work for two years which with a continual Doctor Bill accumulating upon his hands caused him to be obliged to sell off his Farm to pay off the Dets which had accumulated upon him.

He then moved his Family up on Vermont Hill and rented a place for one year this being the Spring of 1830 and in the winter following he bought a nother Small Farm and moved on to it which was only half mile distance all things seeming to prosper with him he resided there till the Spring of 1833 then sold out again and

and things were in a prospering condition with him all the winter of 1829 when he was seized with the Rheumatism which caused his Right Hip to be drawn out of joint and confined him to his bed the Remainder of the winter and in the spring when he got so that he could rise from his Bed he was obliged to use crutches to get about with and could not do much work for two years which with a continual Doctor Bill accumulating upon his hands caused him to be obliged to sell off his Farm to pay off the Dets which he had accumulated upon him. He then moved his Family upon Vermont Hill and rented a place for one year this being the Spring of 1830 and in the winter following he bought a nother Small Farm and moved to it which was only half mile distance all things seeming to prosper with him. He resided there till the Spring of 1833 then sold out again and

3

Bought a nother Farm on Hunters Creek a distance two Miles (I here might say that in the Summer of 1831 My Mother sent me to Chop her some wood and while Choping, an Aple Tree Standing before me my Ax hit it which caused it to glance and it struck my <sup>Right</sup> foot on the Instep and Cut it purty much off which caused me to purty much loose the use of my Toes) And on this Farm My Father Commenced again to settle down for life This was a new place had no Orchard on it things in a Rough state he went to work Builing Fences and putting up Buildings and Clearing of more ground &c Sought out an Orchard Covering five achors of Ground of the choisest kinds of Fruit Trees which he had Researved in a nur-~~ery~~ <sup>ery</sup> which he Planted on the first ~~farm~~ <sup>of</sup> Farm he Bought after his returne from Pencilvania these Trees were said to be as fine Trees as ever was planted out in an orchard;

Bought a nother Farm on Hunters Creek a distance two miles. (I here might say that in the Summer of 1831 my mother sent me to chop her some wood and while choping an Aple Tree standing before me my ax hit it which caused it to glance and it struck my right foot on the instep and cut it purty much off which caused me to purty much loose the use of my toes) and on this Farm my Father commenced again to settle down for life. This was a new place had no orchard on it things in a Rough state he went to work Building Fences and putting up Buildings and Clearing of more ground etc. Sought out an Orchard Covering five achors of Ground of the choisest kinds of Fruit Trees which he had reserved in a nursery which he planted on the first farm he Bought after his returne from Pencilvania these Trees were said to be as fine Trees as ever was planted out in an orchard

He also Fenced in a Garden covering  
 about one Achor of Land and  
 Planted out some of the Choisest kinds  
 of Damsen Plumb Trees, some yellow  
 and Blew which grew to a verry large  
 size also a large quantity of Currents  
 of Different kinds &c. also a large num-  
 ber of Peach Trees And on this Farm  
 he Resided till the Fall of /36  
 In the Spring of 18<sup>36</sup> My Father and  
 Mother Imbraced what is cauld Mormonism  
 that is they joined the Church of Jesus  
 Christ of Larter-day Saints which  
 caused them to become a Castaway by all  
 their Friends and Neighbours save the few  
 who had joined the Same Professions  
 My Father was Odaired and Elder and  
 was appointed by the Sirvants of God  
 to take Charge of the few Saints who  
 Staped forwarded in the midst of opposi-  
 tion and Imbraced the true Gaspel of  
 Jesus Christ which was Reviold from  
 Heaven to Joseph Smith the Prophe-  
 et of the true and living God

He also Fenced in a garden covering  
 about one achor of Land and in it  
 planted out some of the Choisest kinds  
 of Damsen Plumb Trees, some yellow  
 and Blew which grew to a very large  
 size also a large quantity of currents  
 of different kinds etc. Also a large num-  
 ber of Peach Trees and on this Farm  
 he Resided till the Fall of /36

In the Spring of 1836 my Father and  
 Mother imbraced what is cauld Mormonism  
 that is they joined the Church of Jesus  
 Christ of Larter-day Saints which  
 caused them to become a castaway by all  
 their Friends and Neighbours save the few  
 who had joined the Same Profession.  
 My Father was ordained and Elder and  
 was appointed by the Sirvants of God  
 to take Charge of the few Saints who  
 Staped forwarded in the midst of opposi-  
 tion and Imbraced the true Gospel of  
 Jesus Christ which was Reviold from  
 Heaven to Joseph Smith the Prophe-  
 et of the true and living God

who received his first vision in the spring of 1820 being a little over 14 years of age and in the fall of 1823 he received another one ~~in the fall of 1824~~ etc. (Joseph Smith was <sup>Born</sup> 1805 Born 23<sup>rd</sup> December 1805 Sharon Winsor County Vermont) and in the fall of 1824 he had a nother visit with the Angle Moroni this Angle continued to visit Joseph Smith every fall till 1827 and then delivered the Goald Plates to him and from them he Tran-  
-slated the Book of Mormon though the Book of Mormon does not contain near all the matter that was Ingraven on the Plates which he (Joseph) received from the Angle.

The Lord continued to Bless Joseph so that he was able to withstand all opposition and on the 17<sup>th</sup> day of April 1829 he commenced to Translate from the Plates the Book of Mormon with <sup>the</sup> assistance of Olover Cowdry, they continued to Translate till the 15<sup>th</sup> of May following, on this day they commenced to translate the words of Jesus as the words contained in the Gospel of Christ where it says that Baptism by Immersion was for the Remission of sins

who received his first vision in the spring of 1820 being a little over 14 years of age and in the fall of 1823 he received another one in the fall of 1824 etc. (Joseph Smith was Born 1805 Born 23<sup>rd</sup> December 1805 Sharon Winsor County Vermont) and in the fall of 1824 he had a nother visit with the Angle Moroni this Angle continued to visit Joseph Smith every fall till 1827 and then delivered the Goald Plates to him and from them he Tran-  
-slated the book of Mormon though the Book of Mormon does not contain near all the matter that was Ingraven on the Plates which he (Joseph) received from the Angle.  
The Lord continued to Bless Joseph so that he was able to withstand all opposition and on the 17<sup>th</sup> day of April 1829 he commenced to Translate from the plates the Book of Mormon with the Assistance of Olover Cowdry, they continued to Translate till the 15<sup>th</sup> of May following. On this day they commenced to translate the words of Jesus or the words contained in the Gospel of Christ where it says that Baptism by Immersion was for the Remission of Sins.

of hands for the gift of <sup>the</sup> Wholy Ghost; but  
 that this should be conferred on them  
 hereafter, and he commanded them to  
 go and be Baptised and gave ~~the~~ direc-  
 tions that Joseph should Baptise Oliver  
 Cowdry, and afterwards that Oliver  
 should Baptise Joseph.

Accordingly ~~they~~ <sup>went</sup> and were Baptised  
 Joseph Baptised Oliver first, and  
 afterwards Oliver Baptised Joseph after  
 which Joseph laid his upon Oliver's  
 head and ordained him to the  
 Aaronic priesthood and afterwards  
 Oliver laid his hands on Joseph and  
 ordained him to the same priesthood  
 for so they <sup>were</sup> commanded.

The messenger who visited them on that  
 occasion and <sup>confered</sup> that priesthood upon them  
 said that his name was John the same  
 that is called John the Baptised in  
 the testament, and that he acted under  
 the directions of Peter James and John  
 who held the keys of the Priesthood of  
 Melchisedeck which Priesthood he said

of hands for the gift of the Wholy Ghost but  
 that this should be conferred on them  
 hereafter and he commanded them to  
 go and be baptised and gave direc-  
 tions that Joseph Should Baptise Oliver  
 Cowdry and afterwards that Oliver  
 Should Baptise Joseph.

Accordingly they went and were Baptised  
 Joseph Baptised Oliver first, and  
 afterwards Oliver Baptised Joseph after  
 which Joseph laid his upon Oliver's  
 head and ordained him to the  
 Aaronic priesthood and afterwards  
 Oliver laid his hands on Joseph and  
 ordained him to the same preisthood  
 for so they were commanded.

The messenger who visited them on that  
 occasion and conferred that priesthood upon them  
 Said that his name was John the Same  
 that is cauld John the Baptised in  
 the Testement, and that he acted under  
 the directions of Peter, James and John  
 who held the keys of the Priesthood of  
 Melchisedeck which Priesthood he said

6  
This subject striking their minds senseably  
caust them to have a desire within them  
retire in to some secluded place and call  
upon the Lord to enlighten them more fully  
upon that Subject. Consequently they went  
into the Woods to pray and inquire of the  
Lord to Reveile unto them the truth in the  
Case in regard to this words which were Ingraven  
on the Plates. While thus engaged praying and  
Calling upon the Lord a messenger from  
heaven descended in a Cloud of light  
and having laid his hands upon them  
he ordained them saying unto them  
Upon you my fellow servants in the  
name of Mesiah I confer the Priesthood  
of Aaron which holds the Keys of the mi-  
nistering of angles and of the Gospel  
of Repentance, and of Baptism by Imm-  
ersion for the Remission of sins: and this  
shall never be taken again from the earth  
untill the sons of Levi do offer a again  
an offering unto the Lord in Right-  
ousness. He said this Aaronic priest-  
hood had not the power of laying on

6

7  
This subject striking their minds senseably  
caust them to have a desire within them to  
retire in to some secluded plase and call  
upon the Lord to enlighten them more fully  
upon that Subject. Consequently they went  
into the woods to pray and inquire of the  
Lord to Reveile unto them the truth in the  
case in regard to this words which were Ingraven  
on the Plates. While thus engaged praying and  
calling upon the Lord a messenger from  
heaven decended in a Cloud of light  
and having laid his hands upon them  
he ordained them saying unto them  
upon you my fellow servants in the  
name of Mesiah I confer the Priesthood  
of Aaron which holds the keys of the mi-  
nistering of angles and of the Gospel  
of Repentance and of Baptism by Emm-  
ersion for the remission of sins and this  
shall never be taken again from the earth  
untill the sons of Levi do offer again  
an offering unto the Lord in Right-  
ausness. He said this Aaronic priest-  
hood had not the power of laying on

9  
 Ghost and rejoiced in the God of  
 their Salvation

Their minds being now inlightend they began to have the scriptures laid open to their understanding, and the true meaning of their more misterious passages reveild unto them in a manner which they never could attain to prieveously, nor eaven before had thought of, In the mean time they were forced to keep secret the Circumstances of their having been Baptised and having recieved the Priesthood, owing to a Spirit of persecution which had already manifested its self in the neighbourhood, & they had been threatened with being mobbed from time to time, and this too by professors of Religion, and their intentions of mobbing them were only counteracted by the influence of Joseph's wife's Father's Family under divine providence who had become very friendly to him and who were opposed to mobb and

Ghost and rejoiced in the God of  
 their Salvation.

Their minds being now inlightend they began to have the scriptures laid open to their understanding and the true meaning of their more misterious passages reveild unto them in a manner which they never could attain to prieveously nor eaven before had thought of. In the mean time they were forced to keep secret the circumstances of their having been Baptised and having received the Priesthood, owing to a Spirit of persecution which had already manifested its self in the neighbourhood. They had been threatened with being mobbed, from time to time and this too by professors of Religion and their intentions of mobbing them were only counteracted by the influence of Joseph's wife's Father's Family under divine providence who had become very friendly to him and who were opposed to mobb and

Should in due time be conferred on them, and that Joseph should be called the first Elder and Oliver the second. It was on the fifteenth day of May 1829 that they were Baptised and ordained under the hands of messenger.

Immediately upon their coming up out of the water, after they had been Baptised they experienced great and glorious blessings from our Heavenly Father. No sooner had <sup>Joseph</sup> Baptised Oliver Cowdery than the Wholy Ghost fell upon him and he stood up and Prophesied many things which should shortly come to pass.

And again so soon as Joseph had been Baptised by Oliver he also had the spirit of Prophecy, then, standing up he Prophesied concerning the rise of the Church, and many other things connected with the Church and this generation of the Children of men. They were filled with the wholy

Should in due time be conferred on them and that Joseph should be called the first Elder and Oliver the second. It was on the fifteenth day of May 1829 that they were baptised and ordained under the hands of the messenger.

Immediately upon their coming up out of the water, after they had been Baptised they experienced great and glorious blessings from our Heavenly Father. No sooner had Joseph Baptised Oliver Cowdery than the Wholy Ghost fell upon him and he stood up and Prophesied many things which should shortly come to pass. And again so soon as Joseph had been Baptised by Oliver he also had the spirit of Prophecy, then, standing up he Prophesied concerning the rise of the Church, and many other things connected with the Church and this generation of the Children of men. They were filled with the wholy



were willing that they should be allowed to continue the works of translation without interruption and therefore offered and promised them protection from all unlawful proceedings as far as in them lay. Hence they continued the work of translation until the Book of Mormon was finished.

Having received the lesser Priesthood from under the hand of the Angel of God they commenced the Preaching of the Gospel of Jesus Christ and through the year of 1829 they succeeded in baptizing four besides them-selves into the Church or cause of truth according to the pattern that had been revealed to them from heaven and on the 6<sup>th</sup> of April 1830 they organized the Church of Jesus Christ of latter day Saints consisting of six members.

After having said so much about the rise of the Church which my folks joined I shall continue my History

were willing that they should be allowed to continue the works of translation without interruption and therefore offered and promised them protection from all unlawful proceedings as far as in them lay. Hence they continued the work of translation until the Book of Mormon was finished.

Having received the lesser Priesthood from under the hand of the Angel of God they commenced the Preaching of the Gospel of Jesus Christ and through the year of 1829 they succeeded in baptizing four besides them-selves into the Church or cause of truth according to the pattern that had been revealed to them from heaven and on the 6th of April 1830 they organized the Church of Jesus Christ of latter day Saints consisting of six members.

After having said so much about the rise of the Church which my folks joined I shall continue my History

interwoven with my Fathers so far as I  
 can remember As I have previously said  
 my Father was appointed to preside over  
 the few Saints who had embraced the  
 Gospel of Jesus he continued to do till the  
 fall of 1836 Preaching the Gospel and  
 Baptizing all that desired it at his hands  
 he then sold out again and moved  
 his Family to Kirtland Ohio where the  
 Church had commenced to gether or had  
 been gathering from the fall of 1830  
 here he Resided till the Summer of  
 1838 he then sold out again and  
 in the month of June he took his  
 Family and Started for the State  
 of Missouri Caldwell County at which  
 place he arrived sometime in September  
 about these times persecution was rag-  
 ing against <sup>the Saints</sup> to a purty high pitch  
 it was for this that we were obliged  
 to leave Kirtland Ohio, and while  
 we were on our way from Kirtland  
 to Missouri we were told by men  
 and Woman that we would not be

interwoven with my Fathers as far as I  
 can remember. As I have previously said  
 my father was appointed to preside over  
 the few Saints who had embraced the  
 Gospel of Jesus he continued to do till the  
 fall of 1836 Preaching the gospel and  
 Baptising all that desired it at his hands  
 he then Sould out again and moved  
 his family to Kirtland Ohio where the  
 Church had commenced to gether or had  
 been geathering from the fall of 1830  
 here he Resided till the summer of  
 1838 he then Sould out again and  
 in the month of June he took his  
 Family and Started for the State  
 of Mosuria Caldwell County at which  
 place he arived Sometime in September  
 about these times purcecuton was rag-  
 ing against the Saints to a purty high pitch  
 it was for this that we were obliged  
 to leave Kirtland Ohio, and while  
 we were on our way from Kirtland  
 to Mosouria we were told by men  
 and woman that we would not be

12  
permitted to Reside long in that State  
and when we had got into the State we  
were met by an armed Mob who told  
us that we would Catch Hell in a short  
time which caused the hearts of some of  
the Saints who were along to feel quite  
faint we were traveling in a large Camp  
550 of us when we started from Kirtland  
Men woman and Children being the first  
Camps of the kind that the Saints had un-  
dertaken but the Saints continued to  
pray unto God to cause the hearts of Mos-  
the people of Mosourians to be softened  
torged them and to open up the way  
that they might get through in  
Safety which he did for all those who  
continued to persevere their travels  
Some few stoped at Hons Mills  
thinking that they would be safer there  
but this proved to be a mistake  
for 18 of them were Brutally Mur-  
dered by a Mob and were Buried  
in a Well without Coffins or gra-  
Cloaths but those who continued

12  
permitted to Reside long in that State  
and when we had got into the State we  
were met by an armed mob who told  
us that we would Catch Hell in a short  
time which caused the hearts of some of  
the Saints who were along to feel quite  
faint we were traveling in a large Camp  
550 of us when we started from Kirtland  
men woman and Children being the first  
camp of the kind that the saints had un-  
dertaken but the Saints continued to  
pray unto God to cause the hearts of Mosurins  
the people of Mosourians to be softened  
torged them and to open up the way  
that they might get through in  
Safety which he did for all those who  
continued to persevere their travels.  
Some few stoped at Hons Mills  
thinking that they would be safer there  
but this proved to be a mistake  
for 18 of them were Brutally Mur-  
dered by a mob and were Buried  
in a Well without coffins or grave  
Cloaths but those who continued

their journey as I have stated reached <sup>13</sup> Farwest Calwell Co sometime in Septem-  
 ber and then was sent by the Prophet Joseph to Davise Co where the Church  
 had Commenced to make a settlement but we had not been in Davise Co  
 more than a day or two before we Commenced  
 to build a City to be Cauld Adam Ondi-  
 Ammon Some of us Cut House logs  
 others hauled them on the spot and  
 others put them up and by so  
 doing a City sprang up in a very sh-  
 -ort time and while we were busy building  
 and providing for the winter, the Mob  
 was busily engaged in preparing to come  
 against us and Kill and drive us from  
 the State, they come around the Saints  
 pretending to be very friendly and wis-  
 -hed to Sell the saints their Corn fields  
 (that is) the Corn as it stood in the  
 Fields and <sup>take</sup> the Saints Horses and  
 Oxen Wagons and Cows &c in  
 exchange which privilage, the saints  
 were pleased with, hence they

their journey as I have Stated reached  
 Farwest Calwell Co sometime in Septem-  
 -ber and then was sent by the Prophet  
 Joseph to Davise Co. where the Church  
 had Commenced to make a Settlement  
 but we had not been in Davise Co  
 more than a day or two before we commenced  
 to build a City to be cauld Adam Ondi-  
 Ammon. Some of us cut House logs  
 others hauled them on the spot and  
 others put them up and by so  
 doing a City sprang up in a very sh-  
 ort time and while we were busy building  
 and providing for the winter the mob  
 was busily engaged in preparing to come  
 against us and kill and drive us from  
 the State. they come around the Saints  
 pretending to be very friendly and wis-  
 -hed to Sell the Saints their corn fields  
 (that is) the Corn as it stood in the  
 Fields and take the Saints Horses and  
 oxen Wagons and Cows etc in  
 exchange which privilage the Saints  
 were much pleased with. hence they

disposed of many of their Teams and Property in that way not thinking of the desires of the Mosourians. but as quick as the Mob got all they could from the Saints, they packed up their duds as much as passable with their Families and commenced moving off into other Counties to get them out of the way, so that they might Consolidate themselves into an armed Body and come against the Saints and drive them off their possessions and not only get the property back again which they had sold to the Saints but every thing else that the Saints possessed, if possible.

So in the course of a few days the word came that there was an armed Mob collected for the purpose of Driving the Mormons out of the State of Missouri this news caused the Saints to feel strange and in some instances very much cast down.

But knowing that they were

disposed of many of their Teams and Property in that way not thinking of the desires of the Mosourians but as quick as the mob got all they could from the Saints they packed up their duds as much as possible with their Family's and commenced moving off into other counties to get them out of the way So that they might Consolidate themselves into an armed Body and come against the Saints and drive them off their possessions and not only get the property back again which they had sold to the Saints but every thing else that the Saints possessed, if possible. So in the course of a few days the word came that there was an armed mob collected for the purpose of Driving the Mormons out of the State of Missouri this news caused the Saints to feel strange and in some instances very much cast down. But knowing that they were

engaged in the work of God they felt to rely wholly on him for their protection and deliverance and to the joy of their hearts they found the Lord on their side although they were compelled to leave the state. The mob came on filed with madness expecting to drive every thing before them, but the power of God resting on the Saints they went at to meet them and beat them every time although the mob succeeded in burning of their own houses thinking by this move to raise the hugh and cry that the Mormons were burning all that lay before them and so have all the State to turn out to help them carry out their Hellish desires which they succeeded in doing, but before they got themselves formed into a legalised Mob by the Govaner of the State they were met by the Elders of Israel with such power that they could not stand before them.

engaged in the work of God they felt to rely wholly on him for their protection and deliverance and to the joy of their hearts they found the Lord on their Side although they were compelled to leave the state. The mob came on filed with madness expecting to drive every thing before them, but the power of God resting on the Saints they went at to meet them and beat them every time although the mob succeeded in burning of their own houses thinking by this move to raise the hugh and cry that the Mormons were burning all that lay before them and so have all the State to turn out to help them carry out their Hellish desires which they succeeded in doing, but before they got themselves formed into a legalized Mob by the Govaner of the State they were met by the Elders of Israel with such power that they could not stand before them

16

nor never would till domes day if they had  
 Come out as a Milishey ordered out by  
 the Governor of the State at this time  
 I was in my eighteenth year and it  
 was the first time that I had Shouldered  
 my gun and stept forth for the Defense  
 of zion My first expedition out  
 to meet the Enemy was under the Com-  
 mand of Elder Dunham which was in the  
 month of October and November  
 we expected to come in contact with  
 the Mob but did not as they kept  
 out of our way save two men who  
 were with a four Hors Team they  
 plead their inosence and said that  
 they had never done any thing  
 against the Saints and wished  
 to have the privelage of mooving  
 their Mother out of the County  
 in peace which privilage was granted  
 them by Captain Dunham  
 but a Scarter man then one of  
 them was I never saw  
 The mob got themselves

16

nor never would till domes day if they had not  
 come out as a milishey ordered out by  
 the Governor of the State at this time  
 I was in my eighteenth year and it  
 was the first time that I hade Shouldered  
 my gun and stept forth for the defense  
 of Zion. My first expedition out  
 to meet the Enemy was under the Com-  
 -mand of Elder Dunham which was in the  
 month of October and November  
 we expected to come in contact with  
 the Mob but did not as they kept  
 out of our way save two men who  
 were with a four Hors Team they  
 plead their inosence and Said that  
 they had never done any thing  
 against the Saints and wished  
 to have the privelage of mooveing  
 their mother out of the County  
 in peace which privlage was granted  
 them by Captain Dunham  
 but a Scarter man then one of  
 them was I never saw  
 The mob got themselves

17

Cannon and were on their way <sup>17</sup>  
 to Ondiammon when they were met  
 by David Pattin one of the  
 Twelve Apostles with a small Com-  
 pany and put to flight and  
 David got the Cannon they then  
 -ught to hide it so the Mormens cou-  
 -ld not find it but in this thing  
 they were most awfully mista-  
 -taken in, for the Lord was with  
 David and his boys the Mob hid  
 the Cannon in the road thinking  
 of riding their Horses over it they  
 might deceive somebody, but when  
 the Mormon boys found that the  
 Mob had fled in every direction  
 some through the Corn fields  
 and some never stopping to ontie their  
 holters but cut them loose and  
 got out of sight as best they could  
 Concluded that it was best to look  
 about and see what was left  
 after the flight they soon some  
 Cannon Balls and shortly a

a cannon and were on their way  
 to Ondiammon when they were meet  
 by David Pattin one of the  
 Twelve Apostles with a small Com-  
 pany and put to flight and  
 David got the Cannon they tho-  
 ught to hide it so the Mormens cou-  
 ld not find it but in this thing  
 they were most awfully mista-  
 ken in, for the Lord was with  
 David and his boys the mob hid  
 the Cannon in the road thinking  
 by riding their Horses over it they  
 might deceive somebody, but when  
 the Mormon boys found that the  
 Mob had fled in every direction  
 Some through the Corn fields  
 and some never stopping to ontie their  
 holters but cut them loose and  
 got out of sight as best they could  
 concluded that it was best to look  
 about and see what was left  
 after the flight they soon some  
 cannon balls and shortly a



18  
Cagg of Powder and then the Cannon  
Stalk Wagon and Harness and of  
Course they expected the Barrel next  
and while looking for it there  
was an old Sow walking about  
She went to the Middle of the  
Road and went to Rooting  
the Ground up hog fashion  
low and behold there lay the old  
Barrel of course the boys had  
Some little Shouting over it  
when they found it. They soon  
loaded it up and started for  
Adamondiammon and while  
on their way back one of the  
mob came up thinking that  
he was entering the right Cro-  
wd but found his mistake after it  
was to late So David thought as he  
was no doubt it would be right  
to invite him to Ride Consequen-  
tly he got Straddle of the Cann-  
on and Road into the City  
Baring the resemblance of a Prisoner

Cagg of Powder and then the Cannon  
Stalk Wagon and Harness and of  
Course they expected the barrel next  
and while looking for it there  
was an old Sow walking about  
She went to the Middle of the  
Road and went to Rooting  
the Ground up hog fashion  
low and behold there lay the old  
Barril of course the boys had  
Some little Shouting over it  
when they found it. They soon  
loaded it up and started for  
Adamondiammon and while  
on their way back one of the  
mob came up thinking that  
he was entering the right cro-  
wd but found his mistake after it  
was to late So David thought as he  
was no doubt it would be right  
to invite him to Ride Consequen-  
tly he got Straddle of the Cann-  
on and Rode into the City  
Baring the resemblance of a Prisoner

When the Mormon boys got into Adam-  
 on-diammon it was in the dead of the  
 night but the news soon went the  
 rounds that the Cannon was taken  
 from the mob which caused them  
 to rejoice that the Lord had heard  
 their prayers. So it was concluded by  
 Joseph the Prophet and the Brethern  
 to take the Cannon in the morning  
 up on a hill to the place where  
 old father Adam Blessed  
 his Sones and fire off a few  
 rounds. Consequently as soon  
 as the Sun Rose in the Morning  
 the Spirits Collected on the  
 spot and Cannon was prepared  
 and loaded and fired three  
 times and every time it was  
 discharged the Saints took  
 off their hats and Shouted  
 Hosannah to God and the Lamb  
 three times the Report was heard  
 twenty five Miles distinctly  
 this did not put a stop to the

When the Mormon boys got into Adam-  
 on-diammon it was in the dead of the  
 night but the news soon went the  
 rounds that the Cannon was taken  
 from the mob which caused them  
 to rejoice that the Lord had heard  
 their prayers so it was concluded by  
 Joseph the Prophet and the Brethern  
 to take the Cannon in the Morning  
 upon a hill to the place where  
 old father Adam Blessed  
 his Sones and fire off a few  
 rounds. Consequently as soon  
 as the Sun Rose in the Morning  
 the Saints Collected on the  
 spot and Cannon was prepared  
 and loaded and fired three  
 times and every time it was  
 discharged the Saints took  
 off their hats and Shouted  
 hosannah to God and the Lamb  
 three times the Report was heard  
 twenty five miles distinctly  
 this did not put a stop to the

20 Raging of the Mob in the least  
for they continued to collect in  
armed bodies for the purpose of  
coming against the Saints but  
could not prevail nary time nor  
would if they had not the Govern-  
-over at their head his name was  
Boggs and this being their posi-  
-tion they come at last in a  
large body of from six to seven  
thousand, all the while they were  
preparing to come against the Saints  
we were making every preparation  
to give them fits if it was the will  
God both in Davis County  
and Callwell County (the name  
of the City in Callwell Co was  
farwest) this was the place the  
Mob wished to subdue first, so  
the most of the Brethern that  
lived in Davice Co or in the City  
of Adamondiammon went to  
farwest to help to stregthen that  
place as much as possible again-

20

Raging of the mob in the least  
for they Continued to Collect in  
armed bodys for the purpose of  
coming against the Saints but  
Could not prevail nary time nor  
would if they had not the Govern-  
-nor at their head his name was  
Boggs and this being their posi-  
-tion they came at last in a  
large body of from six to seven  
thousand, all the while they were  
preparing to come against the Saints  
we were making evry preperation  
to give them fits if it was the will  
God boath in Davis County  
and Callwell County (the name  
of the City in Callwell Co was  
farwest) this was the place the  
mob wished to Subdue first, so  
the most of the Brethern that  
lived in Davice Co or in the City  
of Adamondiammon went to  
farwest to help to stregthen that  
place as much as possible again-

21

21  
 nst the legalised Mob The Brethren  
 in Farwest tore down their Log Houses  
 and laid the Loggs to gether so that  
 formed a Brest-work around a part  
 of the City and maid evry other prep-  
 -eration that was in their power

The few that was left in diammon  
 united to gether with a full determination  
 to stand to gether till the last minit and  
 when stick they went to work and  
 stalked the old Cannon over a-  
 -new, for the stalk that the Mob had  
 was nothing but an old trough dug  
 out of a large tree we loaded it with  
 old pecies of Iron and links of Chain  
 and in this position we remained  
 under armes day and night till  
 the Mob Came for we did not know the  
 hour they might come, at last  
 the word came down from Farwest  
 to us in Ondiammon that the Mob  
 hade taken Farwest upon the gro-  
 -unds that they were cauled out  
 by the Governour of the State

nst the legalised Mob the Brethen  
 in Farwest tore down their Log Houses  
 and laid the Loggs together so that  
 formed a Brest-work around a part  
 of the City and maid evry other prep-  
 -eration that was in their power.  
 The few that was left in diammon  
 united to gether with a full determination  
 to Stand to gether till the last minit and  
 then stick they went to work and  
 stalked the old Cannon over a-  
 -new for the stalk that the mob had  
 was nothing but an old trough dug  
 out of a large tree and loaded it with  
 old pecies of Iron and links of Chain  
 and in this position we remained  
 under armes day and night till  
 the Mob Came for we did not know the  
 hour they might come, at last  
 the word came down from Farwest  
 to us in Ondiammon that the Mob  
 hade taken Farwest upon the gro-  
 -unds that they were cauled out  
 by the Governour of the State

for Joseph was bound not to oppose the Legal authority of the State when the Mob came in sight of farwest they formed themselves into a line of Battle and continued their march towards Farwest, the Saints seeing this manover they formed themselves into a line of Battle also and went out to meet the Mob, the seeing that their numbers did not want the Saints in the least but that if they continued a Battle was surely pending could a halt and Sent a Flag of Truce and with it stating that they were legally called out into the field by the Governner of the State and that they had <sup>come</sup> to make peace and war, so some our Brethern went down into their Camp to see what was wanted and they wanted Brothers Joseph Hiram and others and officers pledged their word that these men

for Joseph was bound not to oppose the Legal authority of the State when the mob came in sight of farwest they formed themselves into a line of Battle and continued their march toardes Farwest, the Saints Seeing this manuver they formed themselves into a line of Battle also and went out to meet the Mob. the seeing that their numbers did not want the Saints in the least but that if they continued a Battle was Surely pending could a halt and Sent a Flag of Truce and with it Stating that they were legally cauled out into the field by the Govenner of the State and that they hade come to make peace and war, So some our Brethern went down into their camp to See what was wanted and they wanted Brothers Joseph Hiram and others and officers pledged their word that these men

Should be protected and delt with <sup>23</sup> according to law, The mob did not know Brother Joseph or Hiram or any of the rest of those whom they wanted, but Collonel Hinkle not having the real mormon grit come out and betraid the Prophet and his Brethern to the mob and when the mob got Brother Joseph and his Brethern they used as them as mean as the very Devils Hell could make them cust them to all intents and purposes held a Cort Martial and past a sentence upon <sup>th</sup> to be shot the next morning at 9 O'clock but by the providence of God <sup>at</sup> this horrid deed did not take place but the Mob would not <sup>let</sup> them go, and after getting us near the Saints into their grasps by their lying disset they them give up or lay down their arms all the time pretending

Should be protected and delt with according to law. The mob did not know Brother Joseph or Hiram or eny of the rest of those whom they wanted, but Collonel Hinkle not having the real Mormon grit came out and betraid the Prophet and his Brethern to the mob and when the mob got Brother Joseph and his Brethern they used as them as mean as the very Devils Hell could make them cust them to all intents and purposes held a Cort Martial and past a sentence upon them to be Shot the next morning at 9 O'clock but by the providence of God this horrid deed dit not take place but the mob would not let them go, and after getting us or the Saints into their grasps by their lying and disset they them give up or lay down their arms all the time pretending

to be our friends and they were  
a going to do that which was right  
but as quick as the Saints laid  
down their Arms and the Mob  
had got possession of them they  
went to stealing evry thing they could  
lay their hands holt of, Break locks  
to Stables and take out the Saints  
Horses and ride them off and  
would Shoot down the Oxen  
and the Cows and cut out a  
mough for their Breakfast and  
let the rest lay for the Dogs  
they would also Shoot down  
all the fat Hogs they could find  
and go into the Houses of the  
Saints and abuse the Women  
and evry Darned mean thing  
that man could think of they  
wer up to, but none of this till they  
had got our arms in to their  
possession, they would throw  
down the fences around the  
farms, and turn their Hor-

to be our friends and they were  
a going to do that which was right  
but as quick as the Saints laid  
down their arms and the Mob  
had got posession of them they  
went to steeling evry thing they could  
lay their hands holt of. Break locks  
to stables and take out the Saints  
Horses and ride them off and  
would Shoot down the Oxen  
and the Cows and cut out a  
nough for their Breakfast and  
let the rest lay for the Dogs  
they would also shoot down  
all the fat Hogs they could find  
and go into the houses of  
Saints and abuse the Women  
and evry Darned mean thing  
that man could think of they  
wer up to, but none of this till they  
had got our arms in to their  
possession, they would throw  
down the fences around the  
farms, and turn their Hor-

-ses into them and let all the 25  
cattle into that might chance  
to come along

After they had taken farwest  
they came down to Davis Co (Ada-  
mondiammon) and compelled  
us few that were there to submit  
to the same acts of cruelty.

When they came to Diammon they  
ordered Renalds Cahoon (as he was  
the Chief Officer) to caus the Brethren  
to fall into Ranks with all their  
Armes, and after the Saints had  
obeyed these orders, they were then  
ordered by the Mob to March out  
onto a small Perriary which  
laid a little north of the City.  
after ariving on the Spot we  
were then ordered to form into  
a Hollow Square Single file  
and to turn our faces inwards  
After which being accomplished  
they then formed a Hollow  
Square arounds us, and

-ses into them and let all the  
cattle into them that might chance  
to come along

After they had taken farwest  
they came down to Davis Co. (Ada-  
mondiammon) and compelled  
us few that were there to submit  
to the same acts of cruelty.

When they came to Diammon they  
ordered Renalds Cahoon (as he was  
the Chief Officer) to caus the Brethren  
to fall into Ranks with all their  
Armes. and after the saints had  
obeyed these orders. they were then  
ordered by the mob to March out  
onto a small perriary which  
laid a little north of the City  
after ariving on the Spot we  
were then ordered to form into  
a Hollow Square Singgle file  
and to turn our faces inwards  
after which being accomplished  
they then formed a Hallow  
Square around us, and



then gave the orders for us to  
Ground Armes which we done  
laying the musels inwards

When this was done a voice  
around the Square from the Mob  
that now is the time we could  
give the Damed Mormons Hell  
and I thought that then was  
the time that the Mormons could  
give them the fits but nothing  
was said by the Saints

After all this was done they  
opened a gap in one Corner of  
their Square and ordered us  
to Reduse the Square and fall  
into single file and March out  
this done without a word the Mob  
then followed after we were  
marched along side a Fence and  
ten men of us were droped in  
a Corner of the Fence in sev-  
eral places till we were all dis-  
tribetted and then they placed  
Six of the Mob over

then gave the orders for us to  
Ground Armes which we done  
laying the musels inwards.

When this was done a voice  
around the Square from the Mob  
that now is the time we could  
give the Damed Mormons Hell  
and I thought that then was  
the time that the Mormons could  
give them the fits but nothing  
was Said by the Saints

After all this was done they  
opened a gap in one Coner of  
their Square and ordered us  
to Reduse the Square and fall  
into single file and march out  
this done without a word the Mob  
then followed after we were  
marched along side a Fence and  
teen men of us were droped in  
a corner of the Fence in Sev-  
eral places till we were all dis-  
tribetted and then they placed  
Six of the Mob over

each mess of us till all were sup<sup>27</sup>lied  
with a guard, and from this guard  
the Saints Received all kinds of a-  
-buce, some had the Gunes of the  
Mob Cocked and the Mussel pla-  
-ced at their Breasts with a threat  
from the mob that they would make  
two holes through them quicker then  
God All-Mighty could make them  
this I saw with my own Eyes and  
hurd with my own Ears

While they hade us Confined  
in this kind of a way the bl-  
-lence of the Mob were Ramsack-  
-ing the Saints Housses Barns  
Stables and fields Stealing all  
they could lay their hands on  
they would Brake Locks to Barns  
and take evry Hors they could  
find, After they hade keep us  
under gard from noon till night  
they then placed a guard around  
the City and released us to  
go to our homes after they hade

each mess of us till all were suplied  
with a guard. and from this guard  
the Saints Received all kinds of a-  
-buces. Some had the gunes of the  
Mob Cocked and the Mussel pl-  
-aced at their Breasts with a threat  
from the mob that they would make  
two holes through them quicker then  
God All-Mighty could make them  
this I saw with my own Eyes and  
hurd with my own Ears

While they hade us confined  
in this kind of a way the bal-  
-ance of the Mob were Ramsack-  
-ing the Saints Housses Barns  
Stables and fields Stealing all  
they could lay their hands on  
they would Brake Locks to Barns  
and take evry Hors they could  
find, After they hade keep us  
under gard from noon till night  
they then placed a guard around  
the City and released us to  
go to our homes after they hade

Stollen all that they could lay  
their hands upon. The Mob  
took up their Camp Quarters  
in the City and Staid sev-  
eral days and while in Camp  
they maid it a practice to  
Shoot down all the Hogs that  
Came by their Camp also  
Oxen and Cows, I saw them  
Load their Gun and Shoot  
at a four year old Steer and  
brake his hind legg and then  
Stand and Shout and hollow  
like so meny Savages, not with-  
standing in the time they  
had maid a Bull pen and  
caused us to go into it and then  
had a platform maid for  
us to go up on one by one and  
Sign away all our Propperty to  
them to defray the expences  
they might be put to by exter-  
minating us from the State  
in case we were not out of

28

Stollen all that they could lay  
their hands upon, The Mob  
took up their Camp quarters  
in the City and Staid Sev-  
eral days and while in Camp  
they maid it a practice to  
Shoot down all the Hogs that  
came by their Camp also  
Oxen and Cows, I Saw them  
Load their Guns and Shoot  
at a four year old Steer and  
brake his hind legg and then  
Stand and shout and hollow  
like so meny Savages, not with-  
standing in the time they  
had maid a bull pen and  
caused us to go into it and then  
had a platform maid for  
us to go up on one by one and  
sign away all our Property to  
them to defray the expences  
they might be put to by exter-  
minating us from the State  
in case we were not out of

29

the State in ninety days for <sup>29</sup> that was the set time for us to be out of the State, and at the same time shooting down all the Oxen they could get at, and doing all they could to prevent us from getting out of the State at the set time, but by the exertion of Bro Brigham Young and his Bretherin through the influence of the Spirit of God resting upon them and the Saints the Saints were inabled to leave the State in time

After the fuss was settled in Davis Co the Saints all mooved up to Farwest Colwell Co <sup>St. Joseph's</sup> to the <sup>St. Joseph's</sup> time they were permitted to stay in the State, so my Father after mooving into the above Co went to work and put him self up a Logg House to stay in through the winter by the side of a small ~~stream~~ cauld

the State in ninety days for that was the set time for us to be out of the State, and at the same time Shooting down all the Oxen they could get at and doing all they could to prevent us from getting out of the State at the Set time. but by the exertion of Bro Brigham Young and his Bretherin through the influence of the Spirit of God resting upon them and the Saints the Saints were inabled to leve the State in time.

After the fuss was settled in Davis Co the Saints all mooved up to Farwest Calwell Co. to stay the short time they were permitted to stay in the State. So my Father after mooving into the above Co went to work and put him self up a Logg House to stay in through the winter by the side of a small place cauld

30 Logg Creek, here my Father Stayed  
till March 1839 and while here  
my little Sister Annice got  
Burnt to Death by her Cloaths  
Catching a fire from a fire which  
Brook out from a little play  
House that She and her little  
play mates had Built un-  
der a large white Oak Tree  
In the month of February  
I left the State of Missouri in  
Company with Perrygreen Ses-  
sion and Family were also  
in Company with several oth-  
er Families, When we left  
Farwest the Mob would not  
give us but five Cents for  
a Bushel of Corn but when  
we got away a few miles  
they charged us 75 Cts per  
Bushel of Corn, at this time  
I was quite Destitute for Cloath-  
ing I was obliged wear sum-  
mer Cloathing through the win-

30

Logg Creek. here my Father Stayed  
till March 1839 and while here  
my little Sister Annice got  
Burnt to Death by her Cloaths  
catching a fire from a fire which  
Book out from a little play  
House that She and her little  
play mates had Built un-  
der a large white Oak Tree.  
in the month of February  
I left the Sate of Missouri in  
Company with Perrygreen Ses-  
sion and Family were also  
in Company with several oth-  
er familys, When we left  
Farwest the mob would not  
give us but five cents for  
a Bushell of Corn but when  
we got away a few miles  
they charged us 75 cts per  
Bushell of Corn. at this time  
I was quite Destitute for Cloath  
ing I was obliged to ware sum-  
mer Cloathing through the win-

31

-ter on the account of being on <sup>3</sup>  
 the tramp from the state of Ohio to  
 the State of Mosouria and after  
 ariving in this State the Mob  
 was so hostile I could not get  
 no work to do to earn my Cloath-  
 ing, and when I got to Quincy  
 Illanoice I was all most naked  
 but when I <sup>407</sup> here I soon got work  
 and Raged myself out with comfo-  
 rtable Cloathing, we landed in  
 Carthage in March 1839 the City  
 where the Prophets of God were  
 Slain by the mob from Hell.

In the month of March my  
 Father and Family left the  
 State of Mosouria and landed  
 in Quincy Ill- the first of Ap-  
 ril 1839 he mooved his Family out  
 East of Quincy thirteen Miles  
 he was then Cauld by the atharite  
 of the Church to go on a mission  
 to the Eastern States to preach the  
 Ever lasting Gospel and bring

-ter on the account of being on  
 the tramp from the state of Ohio to  
 the State of Mosouria and after  
 ariving in the State the Mob  
 was so hostile I could not get  
 no work to do to earn eny Cloath-  
 ing and when I got to Quincy  
 Illanoice I was all most naked  
 but when I got here I soon got work  
 and rigid myself out with comfo-  
 rtable Cloathing. we landed in  
 Carthage in March 1839 the City  
 where the Prophets of God were  
 Slain by the mob from Hell.  
 In the month of March my  
 Father and Family left the  
 State of Mosouria and landed  
 in Quincy Ill- the first of Ap-  
 ril 1839 he mooved his Family out  
 East of Quincy thirteen Miles  
 he was then cauld by the athorites  
 of the Church to go on a mision  
 to the Eastern States to preach the  
 Ever lasting Gospel and bring

32  
Sould to the knowledge of the plan  
of Salvation, he was gon on this  
Mishion Eighteen Months while  
gon he Baptized upwardst of  
20 Soules into the Church Jesus  
Christ of Latter day Saints he  
traveled in the States of New  
York Vermont Main and Mas-  
sachusetts, After he left hom  
I left Carthage Hancock Co  
and went to help to support  
the Family in Adams Co Ill-  
and while my Father was gone  
we were prospered in evry thing  
we sought our hands to do

When Father left we hade  
but two Cows and when he  
returned two yooke of Oxen  
three Cows and the head of  
yong Stalk and in stead  
of having grain to bye as  
we hade when he left we  
hade 75 Bushels of Wheat  
and 500 Bushels of Corn

33  
Souls to the knowledge of the plan  
of Salvation. he was gon on this  
Mishion Eighteen Months while  
gon he Baptized upwardst of  
20 Souls into the Church Jesus  
Christ of Latter day Saints he  
traveled in the States of New  
York Vermont Main and Mas-  
sachusetts. After he left hom  
I left Carthage Hancock Co  
and went to help to support  
the Family in Adams Co Ill-  
and while my Father was gone  
we were prospered in evry thing  
we sought our hands to do.  
When Father left we hade  
but two cows and when he  
returned two yooke of Oxen  
three cows and the head of  
yong Stalk and in stead  
of having grain to bye as  
we hade when he left we  
hade 75 Bushels of Wheat  
and 500 Bushels of Corn

on hand, and 9 Hogs with a plenty  
 of Cloathing to do us for the present  
 we numbered 10 in Family. I continued  
 to reside at home till June 14<sup>th</sup> 1841  
 on which day I took to myself a Wife  
 by the name of Cordelia Clark Daughter  
 of Joseph and Philinday Clark Born  
 in the State of N.Y. 1825.

we lived to-gether three years, or till  
 June the 14<sup>th</sup> 1844 on this day She died  
 December the 23<sup>rd</sup> 1842 She bore to me  
 a Son, we cauld his name Andrew  
 he being a year and a half oald when  
 his Mother Died, his Grand Mother took  
 him home to live with her

In the Spring of 1841 I was ordained  
 to the office of a Priest and in the  
 fall of 1844 I was ordained a Seventy  
 in the 10<sup>th</sup> Quorum of Seventies  
 A. P. Rockwood being the Sienor  
 President of the Quorum  
 at this time I Sould out my  
 Small possessions in Adams Co  
 and mooved to the City of Nawoo

on hand and 9 hogs with a plenty  
 of Cloathing to do us for the present  
 we numbered 10 in Family. I continued  
 to reside at home till June 14th 1841  
 on which day I took to myself a wife  
 by the name of Cordelia Clark Daughter  
 of Joseph and Philinday Clark Born  
 in the State of N.Y. 1825

we lived to-gether three years or till  
 June the 14th 1844 on this day She died  
 December the 23rd 1842 she boar to me  
 a son, we cauld his name Andrew  
 he being a year and a half oald when  
 his Mother Died, his Grand Mother took  
 him home to live with hur

In the Spring of 1841 I was ordained  
 to the office of a Priest and in the  
 fall or 1841 I was ordained a Seventy  
 in the 10th Quorum of Seventies  
 A. P. Rockwood being the Sienor  
 President of the Quorum  
 at this time I Sould out my  
 small possessions in Adams Co  
 and mooved to the City of Nawoo



34  
and at this time there was great sorrow  
in the hearts of the Saints for on the 27<sup>th</sup> day  
June the Prophet Joseph Smith and  
his Brother Hiram the Patriack were  
murdered by a ruthless mob while  
they were in Carthage Jail under  
the pledge of the Govener of the  
State of Illanois for their safe pro-  
tection, but in stead of them be-  
ing protected from their Ennimes.  
they were left to be Butchered by  
a hellish Mob who come like Dem-  
mons from the lower Reagons with  
their faces Painted Brook the jail  
Door open and fired into the Room  
where Servants of God were Confined  
Killed Brother Hiram on the Spot  
Brothe Joseph Recieved a Couple Balls  
in his Body he then leaped from the  
window and was seessed by the Mob  
and Sought up by the side of well  
Curb and Recieved two Balls  
more in his Body which Caust  
him to yeald up the ghost

34

and at this time there was a great sorrow  
in the hearts of the Saints for on the 27th day  
June the Prophet Joseph Smith and  
his Brother Hiram the Patriack were  
murdered by a ruthless Mob while  
they were in Carthage Jail under  
the pledge of the Govener of the  
State of Illanois for their Safe pro-  
tection, but in Stead of them be-  
ing protected from their Ennimes  
they were left to be Butchered by  
a hellish Mob who came like Dem-  
ones from the lowere Reagones with  
their faces Painted Brook the jail  
Door open and fired into the Room  
where Servants of God were confined  
Killed Brother Hiram on the Spot  
Brother Joseph Received a couple of Balls  
in his Body he then leaped from the  
window and was seessed by the Mob  
and Sought up by the Side of well  
Curb and Received two Balls  
more in his Body which caust  
him to yeald up the ghost

35

Brother John Taylor Being in the same <sup>30</sup> Room Received four Balls from their Guns one Ball entering his hip and tearing it most awfully one struck him on his watch which was in his vest pocket it being the only thing that <sup>saved</sup> his life, Bro Willard Richard was in the same Room at the same time but did not Recieve a single Ball, this as stated above caused the Saints to experience deep Sorrow for they all loved Dearly these men of God for such they were

In the Spring of 1842 my Father and Family Moved from Adams Co to Naughvoo where they could enjoy the society of those whom they loved

On the 14<sup>th</sup> day of December 1845 I married one a nother Wife by the name of Matilda Caroline Fuller who was Born in the town of Providence Saratoga Co State of New York on the first day of May 1820 Daughter of Edwin, Mildred Hannah Fuller we were married by the

Brother John Taylor Being in the same Room Received four Bals from their Guns one Ball entering his hip and tearing it most awfully one Struck him on his watch which was in his vest pocket it being the onely thing that saved his life. Bro Willard Richard was in the same Room at the same time but did not Recieve a Single Ball. this as stated above caused the Saints to experience deep Sorrow for they all loved Dearly these men of God for such they were

In the Spring of 1842 my Father and Family moved from Adams Co to Naughvoo where they could enjoy the society of those whome they loved.

On the 14th Day of December 1845 I married me a nother Wife by the name of Matilda Caroline Fuller who was Born in the town of Providence Saratoga Co State of New York on the first day of May 1820 Daughter of Edwin M. and Hanna Fuller we were married by the



Edward Meeks McArthur

Matilda Caroline Fuller

Daniel D. McArthur

Six children were born to Matilda Caroline Fuller and Daniel D. McArthur. Edward Meeks was the only child who lived to raise a family of his own.

38 <sup>36</sup> Patriarch John Smith Uncle to the  
Prophet Joseph Smith Father  
Fuller maid a good Supper for  
the invited on the occasion we  
had a fine Dance after the supper  
was over all felt well

On the first of February 1846  
I and my Wife went into the  
Temple and Received our washings  
and Anointings and on the same  
day after we had got our Indow-  
ments we went into the Sealing  
Room and I had Matilda Caroline  
Sealed to me for time and all  
Eternity By President Willard  
Richards over the Altar Prepared  
for that purpose. also had Cordelia Clark  
my first wife was dead.

Persecution continuing to rage  
against the Church at Naughvoo  
the Saints were compelled to leave  
their homes and flee to the  
Wilderness for Safety Consequently  
on the 26<sup>th</sup> of February 1846 myself  
and Family in company with

Patriarch John Smith uncle to the  
Prophet Joseph Smith Father  
Fuller maid a good Supper for  
the invited on the occasion we  
had a fine Dance after the Supper  
was over all felt well.  
On the first of February 1846  
I and my Wife went into the  
Temple and Received our washings  
and Anointings and on the same  
day after we had got our Indow-  
ments we went into the Sealing  
Room and I had Matilda Caroline  
Sealed to me for time and all  
Eternity by President Willard  
Richards over the Alter Prepared  
for that purpose Also Had Cordelia Clark  
my first wife was dead  
Persecution continuing to rage  
against the Church at Naughvoo  
the Saints were Compelled to leave  
their homes and flee to the  
Wilderness for Safety Consequently  
on the 26th of February 1846 myself  
and Family in company with a

37  
My Father in Law Fuller and his  
Family with a host of the Bretherin  
and Sisters left our homes and cro-  
ssed the Mississippi River and took  
up our march for the west not knowing  
where we were going, we pitched our  
Tents the first night on Sugar  
Creek a distance from the Mississippi  
eight Miles. This was a place of  
Rendisvouse for the Saints to geather  
at as they were fleeing from their  
Eneymys My Father and Family  
hade left Naughvoo a day or two  
before I left Brother Brigham  
Young astablished this place  
for the Collection of the Saints  
as he hade become the leader  
of the Church by a unanamus  
vote of the whole Church as well  
as the vois of God Brother Heber  
C Kimble was his first Counciler  
and Brother Willard Richards  
was his Secand Counciler Brother  
Brigham Young hade led the

My Father in Law Fuller and his  
Family with a host of the Bretherin  
and Sisters left our homes and cro-  
ssed the Mississippi River and took  
up our march for the west not knowing  
Where we were going we pitched our  
Tents the first night on Sugar  
Creek a distence from the Mississippi  
eight miles. This was a place of  
Rendisvouse for the Saints to geather  
at as they were fleeing from their  
Eneymys My Father and Family  
hade left Naughvoo a day or two  
before I left Brother Brigham  
Young astablished this place  
for the collection of the Saints  
as he hade become the leader  
of the Church by a unanamus  
vote of the whole Church as wel  
as the vois of God Brother Heber  
C Kimble was his first Counciler  
and Brother Willard Richards  
was his second Counciler Brother  
Brigham Young hade led the

Church from September 1844 and the Lord was with him and his Council all the time he had the Revillations of God so resting upon him that he was able to tell the Saints the Cours for them to take under all the trials they were Compelled to bair from their Enemys

The Saints continued to collect at Sugar Creek till a large Camp had got to gethere and were properly organised by the Prophet Brigham with Captains of hundreds of fifties and of teens and in the first of March the Camp took up the line of march for the west not knowing as yet where we were going onely that it was the mind of God for us to west, we continued our march Stoping by the way to get feed for our Stalk where ever we could the Cuntry through which we hade to travel was a perfect

Church from September 1844 and the Lord was with him and his Council all the time he had the Revillations of God so resting upon him that he was able to tell the Saints the Cours for them to take under all the trials they were compelled to bair from their enemys The Saints continued to collect at Sugar Creek till a large Camp had got to gethere and were properly organised by the Prophet Brigham with Captains of hundreds of fifties and of teens and in the first of March the Camp took up the line of march for the west not knowing as yet where we were going only that it was the mind of God for us to west. we continued our march Stoping by the way to get feed for our Stalk where ever we could the cuntry through which we hade to travel was a perfect

39  
Wilderness with now and then a settler  
scattered here and there we had all  
our Roads and Bridges to make as  
we went, Our course was through the  
State of Iowa or then the Territory  
of Iowa, this was a hard journey on  
the old and infern it caused  
many a wone to lay down their Bodys  
to moulder away to Dust, it was a wint:  
and could Spring we had to fall  
Trees so that our Oxen and Cows could  
Brouce the tops for their food and  
whenever a chance would present its  
self for us to purches some Corn  
we would do so and by this proses  
we were inabled to preserve our Stalk  
till the Grass grew, The Camp  
Stoped a distance of one hundred  
and fifty Miles from Naughvoo  
and opened up a farme of five  
hundred Achors, Built a good  
fence around it of Railes and  
put ~~up~~ fourteen good Logg  
Houses etc and left a good meny

41  
Wilderness with now and then a settler  
scattered here and there we had all  
our Roads and Bridges to make as  
we went, Our course was through the  
State of Iowa or then the Territory  
of Iowa. this was a hard journey on  
the old and infern it caused  
meny a wone to lay down their Bodys  
to moulder away to Dust. it was a weat  
and could Spring. we had to fall  
Trees so that our Oxen and Cows could  
Brouse the tops for their food and  
whenever a chance would present its  
self for us to purches some Corn  
we would do it and by this proses  
we were inabled to preserve our Stalk  
till the Grass grew. The Camp  
Stoped a distance of one hundred  
and fifty miles from Naughvoo  
and opened up a farme of five  
hundred achores. Built a good  
fence around it of Railes and  
put up fourteen good Logg  
Houses etc and left a good meny

poor on this place who were not able to proseede any farther.

This place was opened up by the Prophet Brigham expressly for the Poor that were not able to go any farther and for those who were yet behind that were Compelled to leave Naughvoo or be Slaughtered by their Enemies and this proved to be great help to the poor for many a Family maid their fit-out at this place so that they could proceede on their journey a distance of one Thousand and one hundred and fifty Miles westward.

here I left my Fathers ~~Family~~ Family as they could not go any farther for the want of a team as I <sup>was</sup> obliged to take my Team which I had furnished them thus far on their journey.

In the month of May Brother Brigham Started for the

poor on this place who were not able to proseede any farther

This place was opened up by the Prophet Brigham expressly for the Poor that were not able to go any farther and for those who were yet behind that were Compelled to leave Naughvoo or be Slaughtered by their Enemies and this proved to be a great help to the poor for many a Family maid their fit-out at this place so that they could proceede on their journey a distance of one Thousand and one hundred and fifty miles westward.

here I left my Fathers Family as they could not go any farther for the want of a team as I was obliged to take my Team which I had furnished them thus far on their journey In the month of May Brother Brigham Started for the



41.  
west again with all those who  
were able to go, I was organized  
with my Father in law Fuller and  
Family in Bishop George Millers  
Company we continued our march  
westward making our Road through  
woods and Prarias Bridging many  
Streams till we came in sight of  
the Missouri River and at this  
moment we were met with a united  
States Officer by the name of Allen  
Demanding of us five hundred  
men to turnout and go and help  
the United States to fight in the  
Mexican war, which Demand  
the Prophet Brigham Complied  
readily as soon as the Camp  
had arived at the Banks of  
the Missouri River and had  
got their Tents pitched Brother  
Brigham Young went to work  
and raised the five hundred  
Mormon Boys for the United States  
Army although we were then

41

west again with all those who  
were able to go. I was organized  
with my Father in law Fuller and  
Family in Bishop George Millers  
Company we continued our march  
westward making our Road through  
woods and Prarias Bridging many  
Streams till we came in sight of  
the Missouri River and at this  
moment we were met with a united  
States Officer by the name of Allen  
Demanding of us five hundred  
men to turnout and go and help  
the United States fight in the  
Mexican war. Which Demand  
the Prophet Brigham Complied  
readily as soon as the Camp  
had arived at the Banks of  
the Missouri River and had  
got their Tents pitched Brother  
Brigham Young went to work  
and raised the five hundred  
Mormon Boys for the United States  
Army although we were then

43

at the same time being driven from our homes and firesides and Spoiled of all our goods which we had laboured hard to obtain in <sup>the</sup> Short Space of Seven years as it ~~was~~ was only seven years from the time we were driven from the State of Missouri by a Hellish Mob who were authorized to do so by the authority of the State save the small portion we were able to take with us in our flight My Brother Henry was one of the number that composed the five hundred and twenty five as there was twenty five Boys went over and above the number called for by the Government, these Boys received their Blessings from under the hands of the Servants of God and then started on their long and tedious journey across the Plains and Deserts with their napsacks on their backs to help fight the battles for the Government in the Mexican war

at the same time being driven from our homes and firesides and Spoiled of all our goods which we had laboured hard to obtain in the Short Space of Seven years as it was only Seven years from the time we were driven from the State of Missouri by a Hellish Mob who were authorized to do so by the authority of the State save the small portion we were able to take with us in our flight My Brother Henry was one of the number that composed the five hundred and twenty five as there was twenty five Boys went over and above the number called for by the government these Boys received their Blessing from under the hands of the Servants of God and then started on their long and tedious journey across the Plains and Deserts with their napsacks on their backs to help fight the battles for the government in the Mexican war

although we as a people were fleeing for our  
 lives from the same power that could upon us  
 to help them subdue the Mexicans to their  
 power, our feelings on this occasion is only  
 felt or realised by those who were the  
 participaters in these scenes. Fathers were  
 compelled to leave their Wives and Children  
 in their Waggon in the midst of the Sava-  
 ges or Red men of the forest without food  
 or a place to lay their heads also Fathers  
 and Mothers had to part with their Sons  
 not knowing as they would ever behold  
 their faces again though all filled with  
 good faith that they would and all  
 would be right, for the Prophet Brigham  
 had told the Boys that if they would  
 go and do right they should all return  
 again for all that the Enemy could do  
 the Boys started off with cheerful hearts  
 with the Blessings of God on their heads  
 and done all that the Government wished  
 them to do, the Mexicans were compelled  
 to yield the point and become subject  
 to the Government of the United States

45  
 although we as a people were fleeing for our  
 lives from the Same power that could upon us  
 to help them subdue the Mexicans to their  
 power, our feelings on this occasion is only  
 felt or realised by those who were the  
 participaters in these scenes. Fathers were  
 compelled to leave their Wives and Children  
 in their Waggon in the midst of the sava-  
 ges or Red men of the forest without food  
 or a place to lay their heads also Fathers  
 and Mothers had to part with their Sons  
 not knowing as they would ever behold  
 their faces again though all filled with  
 good faith that they would and all  
 would be right. for the Prophet Brigham  
 had told the Boys that if they would  
 go and do right they should all return  
 again for all that the enemy could do  
 the Boys started off with cheerful hearts  
 with the Blessings of God on their heads  
 and done all that the Government wished  
 them to do. the Mexicans were compelled  
 to yield the point and become subject  
 to the Government of the United States

this army of Mormon Boys was cauld  
 the Mormon Battation they taken to  
 the Coast of the Pasiphick and then  
 discharged by goverment left with-  
 out means and to make their back  
 to <sup>to their</sup> <sup>and friends</sup> ~~Stomachs~~, the Best they could, such  
 an act is not known on the pages of  
 Histry but the Boys took it all right  
 and went and found work where they could  
 to get means to help them selves home  
 with, and some of them had hired  
 to a man to Dig, a mill Race and being  
 busily engaged digging, at this Race one  
 day a Brother by the name of Fry  
 Willis Discovered some Gold Dust  
 and took it up and examind it  
 and found it to be pure Gold and  
 this of course caused the Boys to turn  
 their attention to the Digging of Gold  
 as they could make a fit out much  
 quicker and from this times forth  
 the news flew like wild fire till  
 the whole wourld was put in commotion  
 this Discovery was maid in the spring

this army of Mormon Boys was cauld  
 the Mormon Battalion they taken to  
 the Coast of the Pasiphick and then  
 discharged by goverment left with-  
 out means and to make their back to their  
 families and friends the Best they Cauld, Such  
 an act is not known on the pages of  
 Histry but the Boys took it all right  
 and went and found work where they could  
 to get means to help them selves home  
 with, and some of them had hired  
 to a man to Dig a mill Race and being  
 busily engaged digging at the Race one  
 day a Brother by the name of Fry  
 Willis Discovered some Gold Dust  
 and took it up and examined it  
 and found it to be pure Gold and  
 this of course caused the Boys to turn  
 their attention to the Digging of Gold  
 as they could make a fit out much  
 quicker and from this time forth  
 the news flew like wild fire till  
 the whole wourld was put in commotion  
 this Discovry was maid in the Spring

45

of 1847 and Emence quantities of Gold  
was dug in a short time by the Boys so  
that they were able to return to their Family  
and Friends

While the mormon Betalion were  
on their march across the Plains and  
Deserts the rest of the Saints who were  
left on the Banks of the Missouri  
Crossed the River to the west side in  
to the Omehaw land and there com-  
menced to fix for the winter save  
a few who went on up the Platt  
River on to the Loop Fork of the  
Platt a Distancer of one hundred Miles  
and stoped at a place cauld Pawnea  
Village a place where Gouernment had  
undertaken to establish a post for  
the benefit of the Pawnea Indians but  
to no purpose Myself and Family with  
my Father in law and his Family were  
with the number that that composed  
this Camp Bishop George Miller  
was still our Leader in the capa-  
city of a Camp we numbered one

of 1847 and emence quantities of Gold  
was dug in a short time by the Boys so  
that they were able to return to their Familys  
and Friends

While the mormon Betalion were  
on their march across the Plains and  
Deserts the rest of the Saints who were  
left on the Banks of the Missouri  
crossed the River to the west Side in  
to the Omehaw land and there com-  
menced to fix for the winter save  
a few who went on up the Platt  
River on to the Loop Fork of the  
Platt a Distancer of one hundred miles  
and stoped at a place cauld Pawnea  
Village a place where goverment had  
undertaken to establish a post for  
the benefit of the Pawnea Indians but  
to no purpose Myself and Family with  
my Father in law and his Family were  
with the number that that composed  
this Camp Bishop George Miller  
was still our Leader in the capa-  
-sity of a Camp we numbered one

hundred in our Camp there was two other Companies with us of the members, While at this place the Captains Received a Letter from Brother Brigham telling them to prepare for the winter as soon as possible, this being some time in the latter part of August or the first part of September while we were Camped at this place there was a Puncaw Chief and nine of his Warriors Came to our Camp and Staid with us some two or three weeks their Camp was on the Mississouria River a distance from our Camp of one hundred and fifty Miles when the Letter Came to us from Brigham to prepare for the Winter these Indians were consulted as to what kind of a place it was for wintering Stalk on the Missouri River when they were Camped they said it was good So it was thought best to take up

hundred in our Camp there was two other Companies with us of the members, While in this place the Captains Received a Letter from Brother Brigham telling them to prepare for the winter as soon as possible, this being some time in the latter part of August or the first part of September while we were camped at this place there was a Puncaw Chief and nine of his warriors came to our Camp and Staid with us some two or three weeks their Camp was on the Mississouria River a distance from our Camp of one hundred and fifty Miles when the Letter Came to us from Brigham to prepare for the winter these Indians were consulted as to what kind of a place it was for wintering Stalk on the Missouri River where they were Camped they said it was good So it was thought best to take up

The line of march for that place <sup>47</sup> and  
 have the Indians for our guide when  
 all things were ready we took up our  
 march for that point across a coun-  
 try that a Waggon had never rolled  
 before and it was a rough Road  
 the most of the way while crossing  
 this wilderness Country we had the plea-  
 -sure of seeing several herds of Buffe-  
 -lo it was quite a sight to us as we  
 had never saw the like before Brother  
 Emit got on to my Father in laws Horse  
 and took a gun and Galoped of  
 after a herd and shot two Bulls  
 the Camp Stopped and had them  
 hauld them into Camp it was qu-  
 -ite a sight to see Wild Beasts Brought  
 into Camp that would weigh one thou-  
 -sand Pounds we all had Beef a  
 plenty for a while we continued on  
 our journey in safety though over  
 a rough Road till we came to the  
 Banks of the Missouri River  
 we were now a distance of one hundred

47

the line of march for that place and  
 have the Indians for our guide when  
 all things were ready we took up our  
 march for that point across a coun-  
 try that a Waggon had never rolled  
 before and it was a rough Road  
 the most of the way while crossing  
 this wilderness Country we had the pla-  
 -sure of seeing several herds of Buffa-  
 -lo it was quite a sight to us as we  
 had never saw the like before Brother  
 Emit got on to my Father in laws Horse  
 and took a gun and galoped of  
 after a herd and shot two Bulls  
 the Camp Stopped and had them  
 hauled them into Camp it was qu-  
 -ite a sight to see Wild Beasts Brought  
 into Camp that would weigh one thou-  
 -sand Pounds we all had Beef a  
 plenty for a while we continued on  
 our Journey in Safety though over  
 a rough Road till we came to the  
 Banks of the Missouri River  
 we were now a distance of one hundred

and fifty Mills above Winterquarters  
 the point where we crossed the River  
 Winterquarters was the place where the  
 Saints had fixed for the winter Bro  
 Brigham being in their midst with his  
 Council this place was situated on  
 the Banks of the Missouri River  
 on the west side in the Omehaw  
 Territory these Indians were  
 verry troublesom they stool the  
 Saints Oxen and Cows and kill  
 them for to Eat also stool all the  
 Horses they could and every thing els  
 here the Families suffered that  
 were left for the want of Provisions  
 and Houses to Shelter them in and  
 to feed them but all bore it patiently  
 Knowing that there was a day coming  
 when all would hefto give an account  
 for all their acts While the Saints  
 were Stationed at this place they ind-  
 ured much Sickness and maney  
 Died After our Camp had  
 arived at the Missouri River <sup>Pumcaw</sup> we

and fifty miles above Winterquarters  
 the point where we crossed the River  
 Winterquarters was the place where the  
 Saints had fixed for the winter Bro  
 Brigham being in their midst with his  
 Council this place was situated on  
 the Banks of the Missouri River  
 on the west side in the Omehaw  
 Territory these Indians were  
 verry troublesom they stool the  
 Saints Oxen and Cows and kill  
 them for to eat also stool all the  
 Horses they could and every things els  
 here the Families suffered that  
 were left for the want of Provisions  
 and Houses to Shelter them in and  
 to feed them but all bore it patiently  
 Knowing that there was a day coming  
 when all would hefto give an account  
 for all their acts While the Saints  
 were stationed at this place they indi-  
 ured much Sickness and Maney  
 Died. After our Camp had  
 arived at the Missouri River Pumcaw we



49

went to work as fast as we could preparing for the winter we all Built us Comfortable Houses and Hurded our Stalk on the River Bottoms the Indians were quite friendly Concedering all things they Shot one or two hed of Oxen and Stool all the Horses they could get hold of, I went to work and got up my winters Wood and use to go out and Kill wild Turkeys four or five to a time and fetch home to my family which was a great help to us in the meet line

In the mont of December 1846. I left my Family at this place and started for the State of Missouri to Earn some Provision for my Family that we might be able to prosecute our Journey in the Spring

While on my way to Winterquarters I suffered verry much with the Cold for it was verry Cold in deed, there was some fifteen or twenty with me we arived at Winterquarters all safe

49

went to work as fast as we could preparing for the winter we all Built us Comfortalbe Houses and Hurded our Stalk on the River Bottoms the Indians were quite Frinedly concedering all things they Shot one or two hed of Oxen and stool all the Horses they could get hold of. I went to work and got up my winters wood and use to go out and Kill wild Turkeys four or five to a time and fetch home to my family which was a great help to us in the meet line

in the mont of December 1846

I left my Family at this place and started for the State of Missouri to Earn some Provision for my Family that we might be able to prosecute our gourney in the Spring

While on my way to Winterquarters I suffered verry much with the Cold for it was verry Cold in deed there was some fifteen or twenty withe me we arived at winterquarters all safe

51

52 after a journey of one week I continued  
 my journey down in to the State of Missou-  
 -ria a distance of one hundred and  
 fifty Miles further near the City of  
 Saint Joseph here I went to work  
 at any thing that I could find to do  
 I hewed timber made Shingles and  
 Railes Cleared off Land Choped  
 underbrush &c by so doing bought  
 me a Cow loaded my Waggon with  
 Provisions and Cloathing, Cloathing  
 enough to last my Family three  
 years and Provisions for one year  
 and while I was busily at work  
 my Family with all that were at  
 Puncaw Moved down to Winter-  
 -quarters they land the third of May  
 1847 and my Wife after stoping at  
 Winterquarters a day or two started down  
 targe the State of Missouri think-  
 -ing that She might Chance to meet  
 me or hear something from me for  
 She hade not hurd a word from  
 me after I left Puncaw She

after a journey of one weak I continued  
 my journey down in to the State of Missou-  
 ria a distance of one hundred and  
 fifty miles further near the City of  
 Saint Joseph here I went to work  
 at any thing that I could find to do  
 I hewed timber maid shingles and  
 Railes Cleared off Land Choped  
 underbrush etc by so doing bought  
 me a Cow loaded my Waggon with  
 Provisions and Cloathing. Cloathing  
 enough to last my Family three  
 years and Provisions for one year  
 and while I was busily at work  
 My family with all that were at  
 Puncaw moved down to Winter-  
 quaters they land the third of May  
 1847 and my Wife after stoping at  
 Winterquaters a day or two started down  
 torge the State of Missouri think-  
 ing that She might Chance to meet  
 me or hear something from me for  
 She hade not hurd a word from  
 me after I left Puncaw She

51  
went the distance of fifteen miles and  
stoped at Father Clarks and there  
hurd that I was on my way home  
and that I would be there in a day or two  
and on the 10<sup>th</sup> day of May I landed at Father  
Clarks found her not in the enjoynment of  
very good health but overjoyed to see  
me once more and I was as glad to see  
her we stayed there a day or two and  
then we went on up to Winterquaters  
just as we got to the Fary my Cow  
Commenced to Calve we was obliged  
to leave her a short time I Crossed my  
my Waggon and then went back after  
my cow and all was right She had  
a fine Heffer Calf I put them a  
board the Boat and Crossed them  
put the Calf into the Waggon and  
went on about 5 Miles that night  
my Fatherinlaws folks had mooved  
fifteen miles above Winterquaters and  
Commenced to put in a Garden and  
some Corn Potatoes and other things  
So that they might have something

51

went the distance of fifteen miles and  
stoped at Father Clarks and there  
hurd that I was on my way home  
and that I would be there in a day or two  
and on the 10th of May I landed at Father  
Clarks found her not in the enjoynment of  
very good health but overjoyed to see  
me once more and I was as glad to see  
her we stayed there a day or two and  
then we went on up to Winterquaters  
just as we got to the Fary my Cow  
commences to Calve and was obliged  
to leave her a short time I crossed my  
my Waggon and then went back after  
my Cow and all was right She had  
a fine Heffer Calf I put them a-  
bord the Boat and Crossed them  
put the Calf into the Waggon and  
went on about 5 miles that night  
My Fatherinlaws folks had mooved  
fifteen miles above Winterquaters and  
commenced to put in a Garden and  
Some Corn Potatoes and other things  
So that they might have something

53

to Eat as soon as something could grow  
 We landed at this place the 16<sup>th</sup> of May  
 found the folks all well and verry busy at  
 work Plowing and planting there was  
 about 40 Families in this place and  
 the place was cauld Summerquaters

When I got here my Fatherinlaw  
 wanted me to Stop with him at that place  
 though the year and then all get  
 ready to leave the next Spring for  
 the Mountains I also hade Received  
 a Letter from my Father who was  
 then at Garden Gove he also de-  
 sireing me to Stay till he could  
 come up and go along with me  
 to the Mountains so by the intrety  
 of them boath I Concluded to Stop  
 till a nother Spring I then Conclu-  
 did to go to puting in some Corn and  
 a Gardain although I hade a good  
 outfit for the Mountains I put  
 in 7 Achors of Corn and patch  
 of Potatoes I got plants from  
 othr Gardains and transplan-

to Eat as soon as something could grow  
 We landed at this place the 16th of May  
 found the folks all well and verry busy at  
 work Plowing and planting there was  
 about 40 Families in this place and  
 the place was cauld Summerquaters  
 When I got here my Fatherinlaw  
 wanted me to Stop with him at that place  
 though the year and then all get  
 ready to leave the next Spring for  
 the Mountains I also hade Received  
 a Letter from my Father who was  
 then at Garden Gove he also de-  
 sireing me to Stay till he could  
 come up and go along with me  
 to the Mountains so by the intrety  
 of them boath I concluded to Stop  
 till a nother Spring I then conclu-  
 ded to go to puting in some Corn and  
 a gardain although I had a good  
 outfit for the Mountains I put  
 in 7 achors of Corn and patch  
 of Potatoes I got plants from  
 other gardains and transplan-

53

-ted in mine and I can safely say  
that I never had a better Gardain  
than I had that year, the Crops of the  
place all looked first-rate all things  
were in a prosperous condition till the  
month of July and August when ner-  
ly all the Inhabitants were Seased  
with a violent Feavour with Chills  
which Caused great affliction and  
meny Deaths took place and of the  
number of those who Died were  
my Wifes Father Edward M Fuller  
and her Mother Hannah Fuller her  
Brother Thomas Fuller her Brother  
Nif Fuller and her Sister Hannah  
Fuller or I may say Hatch for she  
was Married to Lorenzo Hatch also  
two of her Sister Ovandy's Children  
making in all 7 soules all the rest  
of the Family was verry sick, I was  
also verry sick myself as well as  
my wife and Child I came verry  
near going over bord but through  
the mercy of God I was spared

53

-ted in mine and I can safely say  
that I never had a better Gardain  
than I had that year, the Crops of the  
place all looked first-rate all things  
were in a prosperous condition till the  
month of July and August when ner-  
ly all the Inhabitants were Seased  
with a violent Feavour with Chills  
which Caused great affliction and  
meny Deaths took place and of the  
number of those who Died were  
my wifes Father Edward M. Full  
er and her mother Hannah Fuller her  
Brother Thomas Fuller her brother  
Mix Fuller and her sister Hanna  
Fuller or I may say Hatch for She  
was Married to Lorenzo Hatch also  
two of her Sister Ovandy's Children  
making in all 7 soules all the rest  
of the Family was verry sick, I was  
also verry sick myself as well as  
my Wife and Child I came verry  
near going over bord but through  
the mercy of God I was spared

55

54  
56 there was a great many others who died throughout the fall while I was sick and my Family My Father Came up to See us he laid his hands our heads and said we should live which blessing I believed although they were Dying all around the fort In the month April Brother Brigham and a Company of Bretherin could the Pyinears Started for the Rocky Mountains to find a place for the Saints to gether to they had a long and tedious journey to perform a distance of 1020 Miles they Entered the Salt Lake Valley on the 24<sup>th</sup> day of July 1847 and here the Lord Showed to the Prophet was the place for the gethering of the Saints who had been Scatered from Naughvoo by the Mob and for all the Saints throughout the Earth In the months of May and June there were other Camps started on the tracks of

54

there was a great many others who died throughout the fall while I was Sick and My Family My Father Came up to See us he laid his hands our heads and Said we Sould live which blessing I believed although they were Dying all around the fort In the Month April Brother Brigham and a Company of Bretherin could the Pyinears Started for the Rocky Mountains to find a place for the Saints to gether to they had a long and tedious journey to perform a distance of 1020 miles they entered the Salt Lake Valley on the 24th day of July 1847 and here the Lord Showed to the Prophet was the place for the gethering of the Saints who had been Scatered from Naughvoo by the Mob and for all the Saints throughout the Earth in the months of May and June there were other Camps Started on the tracks of

the Pioniers taking with them 18  
 Months Provisions with their Seed grain  
 to sow and plant when got there or in  
 the following Spring they were prospered  
 in their journey and arrived in safe-  
 ty in the months of September and  
 October Brothers Brigham Heber C  
 a portion of the Twelve and the rest of  
 the Bretherin who composed the Pyon-  
 eers Camp went to work and Plowed some gro-  
 und and sowed some wheat and Planted  
 some Corn Dedicated these Vallies for the  
 Gethering of the and then started to  
 return to their Families save a few  
 who staid to see to what they had sowed  
 and Planted &c Brother Brigham  
 and those that were with him return-  
 ed to their Familys in the month of  
 november it was then verry Cold, the  
 Saints at the Missouria River haild  
 their Return with great joy and  
 gladness. there was a plenty of Grain  
 raised this Season to supply the  
 and to help them to make out their

the Pyoniers taking with them 18  
 Months Provisions with their Seed grain  
 to sow and plant when got there or in  
 the following spring they were prospered  
 in their Journey and arrived in Saf-  
 ety in the months of September and  
 October Brothers Birgham Heber C  
 a portion of the Twelve and the rest of  
 the Bretherin who composed the Pyon-  
 eers Camp went to work and Plowed some gro-  
 und and Sowed Some Wheat and Planted  
 Some Corn Dedicated these Vallies for the  
 Gethering of the and then started to  
 return to their Families Save a few  
 who Staid to see to what they had Sowed  
 and Planted etc Brother Brigham  
 and those that were with him return-  
 ed to their Familys in the Month of  
 November it was then verry Cold. the  
 Saints at the Missouria River haild  
 their Return with great joy and  
 Gladness. there was a plenty of Grain  
 raised this Season to Supply the  
 and to help them to make out their

56  
58 fit out for the Mountain in the Spring  
this pleased the Authorities when they re-  
turned to find a plenty in the midst of  
the after they had been pinched so  
close the year before, As soon as  
the Brethern had got Rested a little  
from their travels through the past  
year they went to work with all  
their mights to prepare their Families  
for the Journey in Coming Spring  
and Stimulated evry other Family  
to get ready and go that Could  
although they had not seen a  
Cornel of Grain grow in the Salt  
Lake Valley and had been told  
by an old Mountaineer who had  
been in the Mountains for twenty or  
thirty years that he would give  
one thousand Dollars for the first  
wheat head that would grow in the  
Salt Lake Valley this kind of  
of talk had no impreshion on  
the mind of Brigham Young  
for he was a Prophet of God

56

fit out for the Mountain in the Spring  
this pleased the athorities when they re-  
truned to find a plenty in the midst of  
the after they had been pinched so  
close the year before. as soon as  
the Brithern had got Rested a little  
from their travels through the past  
year they went to work with all  
their mights to prepare their Families  
for the Journey in the coming Spring  
and stimulated evry other Family  
to get ready and go that Could  
although they had not seen a  
cornel of grain grow in the Salt  
Lake Valley and had been told  
by an old Mountaineer who had  
been in the Mountains for twenty or  
thirty years that he would give  
one thousand Dollars for the first  
wheat head that would grow in the  
Salt Lake Valley this kind of  
of talk had no impreshion on  
the mind of Brigham Young  
for he was a Prophet of God



57  
and knew what he was about he did not  
hesitate one moment but took all that  
could go with him in the Spring of 1848  
which was a host In the winter he ask-  
ed me if I wanted to the Valley in the  
Spring I did the worst kind he then  
asked me how much Team I had I  
told him that I two yoke of Oxen and  
one cow he told me that I was in town  
and could go as well as not and for  
me to get ready and go. I told that  
I was all ready in the Spring to go but  
that my folks wished me to stay till  
they could go. he told me never to  
stop again when I was ready to go  
he said that I would do more good  
to my parrents by going and getting  
something raised for them when they  
come than I could possibly do by stay-  
ing back this I found to be a  
fact for my Father did not  
get ready to go in the Spring of 1848  
but I went on with the re-  
mainder of my Father in laws Family

57

59  
and knew what he was about he did not  
hesitate one moment but took all that  
could go with him in the Spring of 1848  
which was a host In the winter he ask-  
ed me if I wanted to the Valley in the  
spring I did the worst kind he then  
asked me how much Team I had I  
told him that I two yoke of oxen and  
one cow he told me that I was in town  
and could go as well as not and for  
me to get Ready and go. I told that  
I was all ready in the Spring to go but  
that my folks wished me to stay till  
they could go. he told me never to  
stop again when I was ready to go  
he said that I would do more good  
to my parrents by going and getting  
something raised for them when they  
Come than I could possibly do by stay-  
ing back this I found to be a  
fact for my Father did not  
get ready to go in the Spring of  
1848 but I went on with the re-  
mainder of my Father in laws Family

<sup>48</sup>  
 We left Summer Quarters in April and  
 and went to Winterquarters and staid  
 there till the last of May and  
 then we started for the Mountains  
 or for the Valley of the Great Salt  
 Lake a distance of 1030 miles we  
 traveled the first day about 10 miles  
 it Rained through the nite in the  
 morning we continued journey and  
 reached the Horn River in the  
 afternoon here we staid till  
 the fifth of June the Saints  
 Collected at this place daily till  
 there was a large Camp of some  
 two or three hundred Waggons  
 we were organised into Companies  
 of one hundred Waggons each I was  
 organised in to Bro Alleys teen and  
 Bro John Harrys fifty and Bro Bri-  
 ghams Youngs hundred but  
 Bro Alley chose to go in Bro Frees  
 teen so we all went into Bro Frees  
 Company of teen making him  
 twenty Waggons in stead of teen

we left Summer Quarters in April and  
 and went to Winterquarters and Staid  
 there till the last of May and  
 then we Started for the Mountains  
 or for the Valley of the Great Salt  
 Lake a distance of 1030 miles we  
 traveled the first day about 10 miles  
 it Rained through the nite in the  
 morning we continued journey and  
 reached the Horn River in the  
 afternoon here we Staid till  
 the fifth of June the Saints  
 Collected at this place daily till  
 there was a large Camp of some  
 two or three hundred Waggons  
 we were organised into Companies  
 of one hundred Waggons each I was  
 organised into Bro Alleys Teen and  
 Bro John Harrys fifty and Bro Bri-  
 hams Youngs hundred but  
 Bro Alley chose to go in Bro Frees  
 Company of teen making him  
 twenty Waggons in stead of teen

49

Brother Heber; C. Kimbell had a  
Company of one hundred Waggons  
organised at the same time and  
others had Companies organised also  
Bro Brigham started from the Horn  
on the 5<sup>th</sup> of June 1848 we continued  
our journey in safety without any  
exidents all feeling well the Camp  
stopt one day in a week for the Women  
to do their washing and Baking had  
Meetings on the Sabbath days generally  
on the 18<sup>th</sup> day of August my <sup>Wife</sup>  
Bore me a Son, weight eight pounds  
and three quaters, we were then fifteen  
Miles west of the Devils Gate on the  
Sweet Water, we cauld his name  
Daniel D. McArthur Junior, on the  
19<sup>th</sup> we resumed our journey and  
Caroline done first rate Bro Heber C.  
Kimball Daughter had a Daugh-  
ter the same night we continued  
our journey all doing first rate and  
the Camp landed in the Salt Lake  
Valley on the 26<sup>th</sup> of September 1848

Brother Heber C. Kimbell had a  
Company of one hundred Waggons  
organised at the same time and  
others had Companies organised also  
Bro Brigham started from the Horn  
on the 5th of June 1848 we continued  
our Journey in safety without any  
exidents all feeling well the Camp  
Stopt one day in a week for the Woman  
to do their washing and Baking had  
Meetings on the Sabbath days generally  
on the 18th day of August my Wife  
Bore me a Son, weight eight pounds  
and three quaters, we were then fifteen  
Miles west of the Devils Gate on the  
Sweet Water, We cauld his name  
Daniel D. McArthur Junior. on the  
19th we resumed our journey and  
Caroline done first rate Bro Heber C  
Kimball Daughter had a Daugh-  
ter the same night we continued  
our journey all doing first rate and  
the Camp landed in the Salt Lake  
Valley on the 26th of September 1848

the few saints that came into the Valley in 1847 were truly glad to see the Prophet Brigham once more, this Season had been a rather unlucky Season for the Saints who had been in here all summer, for the Crickets had destroyed nearly all their grain and it had left <sup>them</sup> quite destitute for Provisions, this was a hard time for some of the Saints for the want of Provisions, the Saints were obliged to eat all kinds of Greens and Dig Roots and took them and eat them some were so hungry that they took old Beef Hides and cooked them and set them to preserve them from Starvation

Directly after President Brigham Young had landed in the valley he had the Surveyer (Elder Sherwards) go to and survey the Great Salt Lake City Plat and gave out City Lots to the Saints The lots contained one and quarter Achor

the few Saints that came into the Valley in 1847 were truly glad to see the Prophet Brigham once more, this Season had been a rather unlucky Season for the Saints who had been in here all summer, for the Crickets had destroyed nearly all their grain and it had left them quite destitute for Provisions, this was a hard time for some of the Saints for the want of Provisions, the Saints were obliged to eat all kinds of Greens and Dig Roots and Cook them and eat them, Some were so hungry that they took old Beef Hides and Cooked them and set them to preserve them from Starvation Directly after President Brigham Young had landed in the valley he had the Surveyer Elder Sherwards go to and Survey the Great Salt Lake City Plat and gave out City Lots to the Saints The lots contained one and quarter Achor

each and eight Lots in a Block  
 The lots were so laid off that when  
 the lots on the South Side of a Block  
 faced to the South the lots on the North  
 Side of the Block in front of the ones  
 facing to the South faced to the East  
 and West So that no lots in the City  
 fronted each other. The Streets were  
 eight Rods wide and each Block  
 forty Rods square and each three  
 Blocks were organized in to a Ward  
 and a Bishop sought a part to preside  
 over the inhabitants there of and there  
 was twenty Wards in the City the City  
 grew rappedly less then two Months  
 there were hundreds of Dwellings  
 to be seen where there had not a  
 house stood before for thousands  
 of years, and after this City after City  
 sprang up throughout the Territory  
 of Utah, their inhabitants being  
 composed of Saints from all parts  
 of this Globe. Brother Brigham  
 gave me a lot in third ward. and

each and eight Lots in a Block

The lots were so laid off that when  
 the lots on the South Side of a Block  
 faced to the South the lots on the North  
 Side of the Block in front of the ones  
 facing to the South faced to the East  
 and West So that no lots in the City  
 fronted each other. The Streets were  
 eight Rods wide and each Block  
 forty Rods Square and each three  
 blocks were organized in to a Ward  
 and a Bishop sought apart to preside  
 over the inhabitants there-of and there  
 was twenty Wards in the City the City  
 grew rappedly, less then two Months  
 there were hundreds of Dwellings  
 to be seen where there had not a  
 house stood before for thousands  
 of years, and after this City after City  
 sprang up throughout the Territory  
 of Utah, their inhabitants being  
 composed of Saints from all parts  
 of this Globe. Brother Brigham  
 gave me a lot in the third ward and

52  
 I went to work and maid me some Ado-  
 -bies out of Clay and dried them in the  
 Sun (they were like imburnt Brick)  
 and put me up a little House fou-  
 -teen by Sixteen and if ever a  
 Family enjoyed a Dwelling it was  
 us for one

I shall now write down some Bles-  
 -sings that I and My Wife Recieved  
 under the hands of the Patriarch  
 John Smith the father of the  
 Apostle George A. Smith and  
 a Brother to the Father of Joseph  
 Smith the Prophet of God this  
 thing I should have done before  
 but it will do at this time

My Blessing Reads as follows  
 City of Joseph Dec 17<sup>th</sup> 1845  
 A Blessing by John Smith Patri-  
 -arch up-on the head of Daniel D  
 McArthur son of Duncan of Susan  
 Born April 8<sup>th</sup> 1820 Erie County  
 Newyork. For Daniel we lay our  
 hands upon thy head in the name

I went to work and maid me some Ado-  
 -bies out of Clay and dried them in the  
 Sun (they were like unburnt Brick)  
 and put me up a little House fou-  
 -teen by Sixteen and if ever a  
 Family enjoyed a Dwelling it was  
 us for one

I shall now write down some Bles-  
 -sings that I and My Wife Recieved  
 under the hands of the Patriarch  
 John Smith the Father of the  
 Apostle George A. Smith and  
 a Brother to the Father of Joseph  
 Smith the Prophet of God this  
 thing I should have done before  
 but it will do at this time  
 My blessing Reads as Follows

City of Joseph Dec 17th 1845

A Blessing by John Smith Patri-  
 -arch upon the head of Daniel D.  
 McArthur Son of Duncan of Susan  
 Born April 8th 1820 Erie County  
 Newyork. Mr. Daniel we lay our  
 hands upon thy head in the name

of Jesus of Nazareth and seal a Fathers  
 Blessing upon you for I speak in the  
 name of thy Father and we seal upon  
 you all the Blessings of the new and  
 Everlasting Covenant, Thou art of the  
 House of Jacob through the Loines  
 of Ephraim and a lawful heir to  
 the Priesthood which hath power  
 over all things in Heaven and in  
 Earth eaven to bring to pass the  
 Resurrection of the Dead. this power  
 and Priesthood Shall be sealed upon  
 thee in due time with all the keys  
 and Mysteries of the Same, Thou  
 art cauld to hunt up the Remnants  
 of Jacob and to push them together  
 from the ends of the Earth, Thou  
 shalt have wisdom to Confound  
 the wise and the learned of this  
 Generation and put them to Shame  
 He that rises up against thee Shall  
 fall in his own Smair no weapen that  
 is framed against thee Shall prosper  
 nor a hair of thy head Shall ever

of Jesus of Nazareth and Seal a Fathers  
 Blessing upon you for I Speak in the  
 name of thy Father and we seal upon  
 you all the Blessings of the new and  
 Everlasting Covenant. Thou art of the  
 House of Jacob through the Loines  
 of Ephriam and a lawful heir to  
 the Priesthood which hath power  
 over all things in Heaven and in  
 Earth eaven to bring to pass the  
 Resurrection of the Dead this power  
 and Priesthood Shall be Sealed upon  
 thee in due time with all the keys  
 and Mysteries of the Same. Thou  
 art cauld to hunt up the Remnants  
 of Jacob and to push them together  
 from the ends of the Earth. Thou  
 Shalt have wisdom to Confound  
 the wise and the learned of this  
 Generation and put them to Shame  
 He that rises up against thee Shall  
 fall in his own Smair no weapen that  
 is framed against thee Shall prosper  
 nor a hair of thy head shall ever

54  
 fall by an Enemy for the Lord hath  
 given his Angels <sup>charge</sup> to defend thy cause  
 at all times to Break the Bares of  
 Iron and cut the Gates of Brass  
 asunder; Thou Shalt gather thy  
 thousands from evry Nation when  
 thy lot is cast and be able to lead  
 them to Zion with vast Stores of  
 Riches. Thou Shalt be able to do  
 eny Meracle that wisdom will di-  
 rect when it is necessary for the sal-  
 vation of the Children of Men  
 or the Moving forward the cause  
 of Zion. Thou Shalt be blest  
 in thy Family with health peace  
 and plenty. Shall have a num-  
 erous Posterity to bear thy name in  
 Remembrance in the Church forever  
 Shall live if you desire it with  
 a perfect heart to see the closing  
 scene of this generation and  
 partake of all the Blessings of  
 the Redeemers Kingdom worlds  
 without end. Or as much as

fall by an Enemy for the Lord hath  
 given his anjels charge to Defend thy cause  
 at all times to Break the Bares of  
 Iron and Cut the Gates of Brass  
 asunder: Thou Shalt gether thy  
 thousands from evry nation when  
 thy lot is cast and be able to lead  
 them to Zion with vast Stores of  
 Riches. Thou Shalt be able to do  
 eny meracle that wisdom will di-  
 rect when it is necessary for the sal-  
 vation of the Children of men  
 or the moveing forward the cause  
 of Zion. Thou Shalt be blest  
 in thy Family with health peace  
 and plenty. Shall have a num-  
 erous Posterity to bear thy name in  
 Remembrance of the Church forever  
 Shalt live if you desire it with  
 a perfect heart to see the closing  
 scene of this generation and  
 partake of all the Blessings of  
 the Redeemers Kingdom wourlds  
 without end. In as much as



55  
thou art faithful in thy calling my  
Son and listen to Council these words  
shall not fail for these are the words  
of thy Father in common with thy Compa-  
nion sealed upon thee by the authority  
of the Priesthood Amen

My Companins Blessing Read as follows  
City of Joseph August 26<sup>th</sup> 1845

A Blessing by John Smith Patriarch  
upon the head of Matilda C. Fuller  
Daughter of Edwan M. and Hannah  
Born May 1<sup>st</sup> 1820 Providence, Saratoga  
Co Newyork. Sister Matilda I lay  
my hands upon thy head in the name of  
Jesus of Nazareth and by the authority  
given me to bless the Fatherless I place  
upon you all the blessings of the new and  
everlasting Covenant in as much as thou  
hast obeyed the Gospel and left thy  
Fathers House and all thy former  
friends in the midst of persecution  
it is thy privilage to attain unto

55

thou art faithful in thy calling my  
Son and listen to Council these words  
shall not fail for these are the words  
of thy Father in common with thy Compa-  
nion Sealed upon thee by the authority  
of the Priesthood Amen

My Companins Blessing Read as follows  
City of Joseph August 26th 1845

A Blessing by John Smith Patriarch  
upon the head of Matilda C. Fuller  
Daughter of Edwan M. and Hannah  
Born May 1st 1820 Providence Saratoga  
Co Newyork. Sister Matilda I lay  
my hands upon thy head in the name of  
Jesus of Nazareth and by the authority  
given me to bless the Fatherless I place  
upon you all the blessings of the new and  
everlasting Covenant in as much as thou  
hast obeyed the Gospel and left thy  
Fathers House and all thy former  
friends in the midst of persecution  
it is thy privilage to attain unto

67

all the blessings of the new and ever-  
 -lasting Covenant for thou art of  
 the House of Jacob through the  
 lineage of Joseph and shalt have  
 an Indowment in the Lords House  
 Thou shalt have a Companion to  
 go in and out before thee, and  
 thou shalt be exalted to a knowl-  
 -edge of the misteries of the Priesthood  
 learn misteries that have been  
 kept hid from before the founda-  
 -tion of the world, thou shalt be  
 a Mother in the House of Israel  
 and shall attain to all the bless-  
 -ings which the Lord hath in store  
 for his Saints and hold an hon-  
 -orable Standing in his Church for-  
 -ever, and thou shalt Raise up  
 Sons and Daughters that shalt  
 be excelent among those who  
 hold the Priesthood, Thou shalt  
 -alt have exceeding great  
 faith at thy Rebuke the Sick  
 shall be heald and thy Habitation

all the blessings of the new and ever-  
 -lasting Covenant for thou art of  
 the House of Joseph and shalt have  
 an Indowment in the Lords House  
 Thou shalt have a Companion to  
 go in and out before thee. and  
 thou shalt be exalted to a knowl-  
 -edge of the misteries of the Priesthood  
 learn misteries that have been  
 kept hid from before the founda-  
 -tion of the world. thou shalt be  
 a mother in the House of Israel  
 and shall attain to all the bless-  
 -ings which the Lord hath in store  
 for his Saints and hold an hon-  
 -orable Standing in his Church for-  
 -ever, and thou shalt Raise up  
 Sons and Daughters that shalt  
 be excelent among those who  
 hold the Priesthood. Thou sh-  
 -alt have exceeding great  
 faith at thy Rebuke the Sick  
 shall be heald and thy Habitation

shall be a Dwelling place of <sup>57</sup> peace  
health and plenty, and thou  
shalt see thy Relations and friends  
embracing the truth and obeying the  
Gospel and rejoicing in the words  
of the new and everlasting Covenant  
you shall enjoy every blessing which  
you desire in Riteausness shall for-  
get all thy sorrows and your joy  
shall be full. Shalt live to see the  
Closing Scene of this Generation  
and if your faith does not fail  
and you keep yourself unspotted from  
the world not a word which I have  
spoken shall fail and I seal you  
up to Eternal life Amen

In the winter of 1848 there was a  
great many Families that were obliged  
to reside in their Waggon unaccount  
of not arriving in the Great Salt  
Lake Valley soon enough to Build  
themselves Houses before the cold weather  
set in. Some did not get in till the

57

Shall be a Dwelling place of peace  
health and plenty, and thou  
Shalt see thy Relations and friends  
embracing the truth and obeying the  
Gospel and rejoicing in the words  
of the new and everlasting Covenant  
you Shall enjoy evry blessing which  
you desire in Riteausness shall for-  
get all thy sorrows and your joy  
Shall be full. Shalt live to see the  
Closing Scene of this Generation  
and if your faith does not fail  
and you keep yourself unspotted from  
the world not a word which I have  
Spoken Shall fail and I Seal you  
up to Eternal life Amen

69

In the winter of 1848 there was a  
great many Families that were obliged  
to reside in their Waggon unaccount  
of not arriving in the Great Salt  
Lake Valley soon enough to Build  
themselves Houses before the cold weather  
sat in. Some did not get in till the

58  
 last of October. President Willard Richards was one of the number. A large Council House was one of the first Buildings that was erected in Great Salt Lake City it <sup>was</sup> two Stories high the Walls of the lower Story were Built of Rock hauld from the Mountain a distance of six Miles. the upper Story (walls) were Built of adobies. Hiram Clossen being foreman in the mason work. This was the first Publick Building that was put up in this City. The winter of 1848 and 49 was quite Cold and severe deep snow in the Mountains which maid it hard for the Saints to get their wood; but all went Cheerful through the winter with the Saints there a few who thought it a rather hard pill for them to put up with such as getting wood out of the Cancons and being somewhat pinched for food and of course

last of October. President Willard Richards was one of the number a large Council House was one of the first Buildings that was erected in Great Salt Lake City it was two Stories high the Walls of the lower story were built of Rock hauld from the Mountain a distance of Six Miles the upper Story (walls) were built of adobies. Hiram Clossen being foreman in the mason work This was the first Publick Building that was put up in this City The winter of 1848 and 49 was quite Cold and cevere deep snow in the Mountains which maid it hard for the Saints to get their Wood but all went Cheerful through the winter with the Saints save a few who thought it rather hard pill for them to put up with Such as geting wood out of the Cancons and being somewhat pinched for food and of course

59  
left the first chance that did present itself to them. The Saints that Emigrated to this place in the summer of 1847 and 48 was obliged to fetch 18 Months provision and some seed grain to sow for they knew not that a single spear of Corn or Wheat or a Potato or Squash or Cabbage or any thing else would grow in these Vallies and it truly was a trying time for those who came here in the season of 1847 for their crops that they put into the ground in the spring of 1848 were almost universally destroyed by the Crickets consequently it caused them to depend in a great measure upon the Saints that came in in the fall of 48 this placed us in purty snug quaters as we were one thousand Miles from where our grain grew for we were obliged to preserve a suffisient for our seed to sow the coming Spring but the Lord was with us as in days that had past

71  
left the first chance that did present itself to them. The Saints that Emigrated to this place in the summer of 1847 and 48 was obliged to fetch 18 months of provision and some Seed grain to sow for they knew not that a single spear of Corn or Wheat or a Potato or Squash or Cabbage or eny thing else would grow in these Vallies and it truly was a trying time for those who came here in the Season of 1847 for their crops that they put into the ground in the Spring of 1848 were almost universally destroyed by the Crickets concequently it caused them to depend in a great measure upon the Saints that came in in the fall of 48 this placed us in purty snug quaters as we were one thousand miles from where our grain grew for we were obliged to preserve a suffisient for our seed to sow the coming Spring but the Lord was with us as in days that had past

60  
72 and our lives were preserved *asid.*  
when spring came evry saint went to  
with all his strength to ploughing and  
and sowing the scanty allowance of  
Seed grain that was left - some  
Families havin a nough to sow one  
achor some two achors &c and they  
offered up their prayrs to almighty  
God to have him bless the labours  
of their hands and the land that  
they cultivated that they might have  
a bountiful Crop and I am a wit-  
-ness to testafy that the Lord heard  
the prayrs of the Saints and bless-  
-ed them beyond their most Jang-  
-guine expectations and there  
was an a bundance of Grain raised  
to do the Saints till a nother har-  
-vest and a Considerable to spare to the  
Saints who <sup>were</sup> coming in and some to the  
passers by who ware on their way  
to Callafornia for gold, I raised  
40 forty Bushels of wheat and 25  
twenty-five Bushels of Corn and

60  
and our lives were preserved and  
when spring came evry saint went to  
with all his Strength to ploughing and  
and sowing the Scanty allowance of  
Seed grain that was left some  
Families havin a nough to sow one  
achor some two achors etc and they  
offered up their prayrs to Almighty  
God to have him bless the labours  
of their hands and the land that  
they cultivated that they might have  
a bountiful Crop and I am a wit-  
-ness to testafy that the Lord heard  
the prayrs of the Saints and bless-  
-ed them beyond their most Jang-  
-guine expectations and there  
was an a bundance of grain raised  
to do the Saints till a nother har-  
-vest and conciderable to spare to the  
Saints who were comeing in and to the  
passers by who ware on their way  
to Callafornia for gold. I raised  
40 forty Bushels of wheat and 25  
twenty-five Bushels of Corn and

61  
five Bushels of oats as well as a  
considerable Garden Sace, so all  
fear was removed from the minds of the  
Saints as regarded the fertility of the soil  
in the Vallies of these Rocky Moun-  
tains, all Saints felt to give God th-  
anks for his rich blessings.

Soon after I landed in this place I  
hade my Boy Daniel D. Blessed under  
the hands of Patriarch John Smith who  
Blessed us in Naughvoo the Child  
grew and bid fair for a smart man  
All things passed on quietly, the Saints  
come flocking in, in the fall of 1849  
like so many Doves to their windows feel-  
ing thankful to God that he hade still  
a place for the gethering of his people  
The Saints commenced to prosper on evry  
hand, The Gentiles came powering in  
from Different parts of Earth on their  
way for the Mines which was found  
by the Mormon Boys in Callifornia and  
they left their Horses Oxen Waggons  
Cloathing Ploughs Spades Shovels

73  
five Bushels of oats as well as a  
considerable garden Sace, so all  
fear was removed from the minds of the  
Saints as regarded the fertility of the soil  
in the Vallies of these Rocky Moun-  
tains. all Saints felt to give God th-  
anks for his rich blessings.

Soon after I landed in this place I  
hade my Boy Daniel D. Blessed under  
the hands of Patriarch John Smith who  
Blessed us in Naughvoo the Child  
grew and bid fair for a smart man  
All things passed on quietly, the Saints  
come flocking in. in the fall of 1849  
like so meny Doves to their windoes feel-  
ing thankful to God that he hade still  
a place for the gethering of his people  
The Saints commenced to prosper on evry  
hand. The Gentiles came powering in  
from Different parts of Earth on their  
way for the Mines which was found  
by the Mormon Boys in Callifornia and  
they left their Horses Oxen Waggons  
Cloathing Ploughs Spades Shovels

<sup>62</sup>  
 Hows saws augers Chizels Plains  
 and what little Cash they hade for  
 a small outfit to go the rest of jou-  
 rney, they also left Sugar tea  
 and Coffee. This Caused the saints  
 to wax fat so that all seemed to  
 have a plenty of Money and means  
 to make them Comfortable and in this  
 prosperous Condition many of the saints  
 forgot their God and followed on  
 in the wake for Gold but those who  
 Continued to do right did Continue to  
 prosper and accumulate around  
 them such things as they needed to  
 make them Comfortable they increced  
 in Houses and Lands in Wives and  
 Children; and above all in the  
 knowledge of God all was peace  
 till in the winter of 1849 and 50 at this  
 time the Utah Indians became some-  
 what hostile and commened a Stealing  
 the Saints Cattle and Horses and comm-  
 iting various Depredations until the  
 Saints could not put up with any

Hows saws augers Chizels Plains  
 and what little cash they hade for  
 a small outfit to go the rest of jou-  
 rney. they also left Sugar tea  
 and Coffee. This caused the Saints  
 to wax fat so that all seemed to  
 have a plenty of Money and means  
 to make them Comfortable and in this  
 prosperous Condition many of the Saints  
 forgot their God and followed on  
 in the wake for Gold but those who  
 continued to do right did continue to  
 prosper and accumulate a round  
 them such things as they needed to  
 make them Comfortable they increced  
 in Houses and Lands in Wives and  
 Children: and above all in the  
 knowledge of God all was peace  
 till in the winter of 1849 and 50 at this  
 time the Utah Indians became some-  
 -what hostile and commenced a Stealing  
 the Saints Cattle and Horses and Comm-  
 -iting various Deppredations until the  
 Saints Could not put up with eny



longer they tried every way they could <sup>63</sup>  
to get the Indians to stop without going  
to war with them but nothing would do  
consequently the Saints fitted up a small  
force and marched to the Indians camp  
which was near the City of Provo and  
routed them had a small engagement  
kild several of the Indians and took some  
Prisoners this brought them to terms;

there was but one saint kild his name  
was Higby three or four were wounded  
but recovered, soon after an outbreak  
took place by the Indians in Tuella valley  
stool a lot of Cattle and drove them off  
and kild them a small company of the  
Bretherin persued after them quite a  
distance from any water except a  
small Spring by a large patch of Ceed-  
ers the Saints attacked them routed  
them kild a few found the meat they  
had kild cut up in thin flakes  
and spread upon the tops of the Ceders  
to dry the Bretherin sought fire to the  
Ceders and consequently the Ceders and

75  
longer they tried every way they could  
to get the Indians to stop without going  
to war with them but nothing would do  
consequently the Saints fitted up a Small  
force and marched to the Indians camp  
which was near the City of Provo and  
routed them had a small engagement  
kild several of the Indians and took some  
Prisoners this brought them to terms.  
there was but one saint kild his name  
was Higby three or four were wounded  
but Recovered. Soon after an outbreak  
took place by the Indians in Tuella valley  
Stool a lot of Cattle and drove them off  
and kild them a small company of the  
Bretherin persued after them quite a  
distance from any water except a  
small spring by a large patch of Ceed-  
ers the Saints attacked them routed  
them kild a few found the meat they  
had kild cut up in thin flakes  
and spread upon the tops of the Ceders  
to dry the Brethern sought fire to the  
Ceeders and consequently the Ceders and

76 <sup>64</sup> meet were concumed by fire this put a  
final stop their stealing for some time save  
now and then an Ox was taken this was  
hard for the Red Man to over come. Stealing  
was so natural a horse would now and  
then come up missing this the Saints looked  
for. There was no saint kild in the  
above fray: and was peace again

On the 15<sup>th</sup> day of March 1849 the  
Convention appointed the following per-  
-sones a Committee to draft a Constitution  
for the State of Deseret viz:

- |                   |                   |
|-------------------|-------------------|
| Albert Carrington | Chas. C. Rich     |
| Joseph Haywood    | John Taylor       |
| William W. Phelps | Parley P. Pratt   |
| David Fulmer      | John M. Bernhisel |
| John T Fulmer     | Erastus Snow      |

March 18<sup>th</sup> 1849 Albert Carrington  
Chairman of the Committee reported  
the following Constitution that can be  
Read by all who wish to read them  
in the Devised Laws of Utah

64  
meet were concumed by fire this put a  
final stop their stealing for some time save  
now and then an ox was taken this was  
hard for the Red Man to over come. Stealing  
was so natural a horse would now and  
then come up missing this the Saints looked  
for. There was no saint kild in the  
above fray: and was peace again

On the 15th day of March 1849 the  
Convention appointed the following per-  
sones a Committee to draft a Constitution  
for the State of Deseret viz:

- |                   |                   |
|-------------------|-------------------|
| Albert Carrington | Chalis C. Rich    |
| Joseph Haywood    | John Taylor       |
| William W. Phelps | Parley P. Pratt   |
| David Fulmer      | John M. Bernhisel |
| John T Fulmer     | Erastus Snow      |

March 18th 1849 Albert Carrington  
Chairman of the Committee reported  
the Constitution that can be  
read by all who wish to read them  
in the Devised Laws of Utah

65  
they were Read and unanimously  
adopted by the Convention

September 9<sup>th</sup> 1850 The Constitution  
and Laws of the United States were exten-  
-ended over and declared to be in force  
in the Territory of Utah (So named  
by Congress but by the saints it is call  
the State of Deseret)

President Brigham Young was cho-  
-sen by the Saints and appointed by the  
Government of the United States to be  
the Governor of the Territory of Utah  
this was a joyful time to the saints  
for they had ben under Gentile gov-  
-erners, longer a nough

The Judges and Secretaries &c were  
sent here from the Gentiles. though  
it was contry to the feelings of the  
Saints for they new that that there  
were men among the Saints was more  
Capable for Such Offices than those  
who were sent by our Enymies

The Judges name was Brockus  
and he was a mean man concequently

they were Read and unanimously  
adopted by the Convention

September 9th 1850 The Constitution  
and the Laws of the United States were exten-  
-ended over and declared to be in force  
in the Territory of Utah (So named  
by Congress but by the Saints it is cauld  
the State of Deseret)

President Brigham Young was cho-  
-sen by the Saints and apointed by the  
Government of the United States to be  
the Govener of the Territory of Utah  
this was a joyful time to the Saints  
for they hade ben under gentile gov-  
-eners long a nough

The judges and Sectaries etc were  
sent here from the Gentiles. though  
it was contry to the feelings of the  
Saints for they new that that there  
were men among the Saints was more  
capeble for Such Offices than those  
who were sent by our Enymies  
the Jugdes name was Brockus  
and he was a mean man concequently

got a severe Reprimand from the Prophet of God Brigham Young which caused him to squirm and leave his post and flee to the States and to make his flight appear just in the eyes of the world he went to work and Published a multitude of Lies against the Saints but he gained nothing by that for they turned upon their own heads as was the case with others who were dishonest at heart. Things continued to prosper under the governership of President Young

In the Spring of 1850 I purchest a City Lot of Mr James Cregg in Block 21 and lot 5 Third Ward and put a good substacial Fence around my portion of the Block as all feencing at that time in the City was inclosing Blocks instead of single Lots

In the Fall of 1851 I put up the walls of a Story and a half House 18 by 26 and in consequence

got a severe Reprimand from the Prophet of God Brigham Young which caused him to squirm and leave his post and flee to the States and to make his flight appear just in the eyes of the world he went to work and Published a multitude of Lies against the Saints but he gained nothing by that for they turned upon his own heads as was the case with others who were dishonest at heart. Things continued to prosper under the governer Ship of President Young

In the Spring of 1850 I purchest a City Lot of Mr. James Cregg in Block 21 and lot 5 Third Ward and put a good substacial Fence around my portion of the Block as all feencing at that time in the City was inclosing Blocks instead of Single Lots

In the Fall of 1851 I put up the walls of a Story and a half House 18 by 26 and in Consequence

of being disappointed in obtaining <sup>67</sup> the  
Lumber that I had bought and paid  
for I was obliged to let the House  
stand without being Closed in through  
the Winter, but in the Summer of 52  
I took my Team and went into the  
Canyon Cut and hauled my own logs  
into the Mill and got them sawed  
into Lumber and went to work and  
Closed in my House and Finished it  
off inside myself so far as the work  
-work was concerned, the Plastering I hir-  
-ed <sup>done</sup> by Mr Philow Johnston and in the  
Month of August (latter part) I mo-  
-ved my Family into the House

In the Month July 1850 last day  
my Wife was delived of a Daughter  
we could her name Hannah Susan  
and in August 28<sup>th</sup> 1852 She  
was Delivered of a nother Daughter  
we could her Name Emma Matilda  
and on this day there was a spe-  
-shial Conference Caused by the first  
Presidency of the Church of Jesus

79  
of being disappointed in obtaining the  
Lumber that I had bought and paid  
for I was obliged to let the House  
Stand without being Closed in through  
the Winter. but in the Summer of 1852  
I took my Team and went into the  
Canyon Cut and hauled my own logs  
into the Mill and got them Sawed  
into Lumber and went to work and  
Closed in My House and Finished it  
off inside myself so far as the wood-  
work was concerned. the Plastering I hir-  
-ed done by Mr. Philow Johnston and in the  
Month of August (latter part) I mo-  
-ved my Family into the House  
In the month of July 1850 last day  
my Wife was delived of a Daughter  
we could her name Hannah Susan  
and in August 28th 1852 She  
was Delivered of a nother Daughter  
we could he name Emma Matilda  
and on this day there was a spe-  
-shial Conferenced caused by the first  
Presidency of the Church of Jesus

68  
80 Christ for all the Elders of Israel  
to assemble in the Tabernacle  
on purpose to transact business for  
the upbuilding of the Kingdom of  
God in these last days and 2500  
persons were congregated on the occasion.

A considerable amount of highly  
important business was transacted  
amongst which was the appointment  
of one hundred and sixty Elders  
on Missions to various portions of the  
habitable globe, myself being one  
of the number.

Their places of appointment and  
names of persons as follows

### America

City of Washington

Orson Pratt of the Twelve Apostles

Pottawatomie Iowa. Nova Scotia and

Daniel Miller British N. A. Provinces

St. Louis. O. D. L. Buckland

Horace S. Eldridge Benjamin T. Mitchel

New Orleans. John Robinson  
James Brown Joseph Millet

68

Christ for all the Elders of Israel  
to assemble in the Tabernacle  
on purpose to transact business for  
the upbuilding of the Kingdom of  
God in these last days and 2500  
persons were congregated on the occasion

A considerable amount of highly  
important business was transacted  
amongst which was the appointment  
of one hundred and Sixty Elders  
on Missions to various portions of the  
habitable globe. Myself being one  
of the number.

Their places of appointment and  
names of persons as follows

### America

City of Washington

Orson Pratt of the Twelve Apostles

Pottawatomie Iowa Nova Scotia and

Daniel Miller British N. A. Provinces

St. Louis O. D. L. Buckland

Horace S. Eldridge Benjamin T. Mitchel

New Orleans John Robinson

James Brown Joseph Millet

Texas.	West Indies. '69
Preston Thomas	Jessie Turpin
William Camp	Darwin Richardson
British Guiana,	Alford B Lambson
Elijah Thomas	Aaron Farr
James Brown	

### Europe

England and other Countries	
Daniel Spencer	Levi E. Riter
Charles A. Harper	John S. Fullmer
Isaac Allred	William Glover
John Van Cott	Richard Cook
Mellen Attwood	William Clayton
Chancy G. Webb	William Pitt
Charles Smith	John Charles Hall
Sylvester H. Earl	John Oakley
Thomas W. Treat	William Woodward
Benjamin Brown	James G. Willie
James T Park	Daniel D. McArthur
William Empey	Moses Thurstin
Perrygrine Sessions	John Parry
Osman M. Duel	Spenser Crandall
John A. Hunt	James Pace
Edward Martain	Elias Gardner
David Grant	

Texas	West Indies
Preston Thomas	Jessie Turpin
William Camp	Darwin Richardson
British Guina	Alford B Lambson
Elijah Thomas	Aaron Farr
James Brown	

### Europe

England and other Countries	
Daniel Spencer	Levi E. Riter
Charles A. Harper	John S. Fullmer
Isaac Allred	William Glover
John Van Cott	Richard Cook
Mellen Attwood	William Clayton
Chancy G. Webb	William Pitt
Charles Smith	John Charles Hall
Sylvester H. Earl	John Oakley
Thomas W. Treat	William Woodward
Benjamin Brown	James G. Willie
James T Park	Daniel D. McArthur
William Empey	Moses Thurstin
Perrygrine Sessions	John Parry
Osman M. Duel	Spenser Crandall
John A. Hunt	James Pace
Edward Martain	Elias Gardner
David Grant	

Wales Edward Stevenson  
 Dan Jones Nathan, T. Porter  
 Thomas Jeremy  
 Daniel Daniels Denmark  
 Edward Griffin George Parry  
 Ireland  
 Daniel Taner Norway  
 John McDonald Eric, G. M. Hogan  
 Canute Peterson  
 France  
 Andrew L. Lamereaux Asia  
 Calcutta & Hindostan  
 Germany Nathaniel V. Jones  
 George C. Riser Samuel A. Wooley  
 Jacob F. Secrist Richard Ballantyne  
 Georg Mayer Amos M. Musker  
 William Taylor William F. Carter  
 Berlin Prussia Robert Skelton  
 Wm Fotheringham  
 Orson Spencer Truman Leonard  
 Jacob Hauts Robert Owen  
 Moses Clough  
 Gibraltar China  
 Hosea Stout

Wales Edward Stevenson  
 Dan Jones Nathan T. Porter  
 Thomas Jeremy  
 David Daniels Denmark  
 Edward Giffin George Parry  
 Ireland  
 Daniel Taner Norway  
 John McDonald Eric G. M. Hogan  
 Canute Peterson  
 France  
 Andrew L. Lamereaux Asia  
 Calcutta & Hindostan  
 Germany Nathaniel V. Jones  
 George C. Riser Samuel A. Wooley  
 Jacob F. Secrist Richard Ballantyne  
 William Taylor Robert Skelton  
 Berlin Prussia Wm Fotheringham  
 Orson Spencer Truman Leonard  
 Jacob Hauts Robert Owen  
 Moses Clough  
 Gibraltar China  
 Hosea Stout



Walter Thompson  
James Lewis  
Chapman Duncan

John Hyde  
John S. Eldredge  
James Graham  
Noah T. Guyman

Siam

Channey W. West  
Sterne Hotchkiss  
Harlow Redfield

Sandwich Isles  
Ephraim Green  
William McBride

Africa

Cape of Good Hope  
Jesse Haven  
Leonard I. Smith  
William Walker

James Lawson  
Nathan Tanner  
Reddick N. Allred  
Reddin A. Allred  
Thomas Kairnes  
Egerton Snider  
Benjamin F. Johnson

Australasia and  
The Pacific  
Australia

Augustus Farnham  
William Hyde  
Burr Frost  
Absalom P. Dowdle  
Josiah W. Fleming  
Paul Smith

All the above named  
Elders who were to go  
East from this place  
were to be in Readiness  
to start on their  
Missions in ten  
days from their  
Appointment and

Walter Thompson  
James Lewis  
Chapman Duncan

John Hyde  
John S. Eldredge  
James Graham  
Noah T. Guyman

Siam

Chaney W. West  
Sterne Hotchkiss  
Harlow Redfield

Sandwich Isles  
Ephraim Green  
William McBride  
James Lawson

Africa

Cape of Good Hope  
Jesse Haven  
Leonard I. Smith  
William Walker

Nathan Tanner  
Reddick N. Allred  
Reddin A. Allred  
Thomas Kairnes  
Egerton Snider  
Benjamin F. Johnson

Australasia and  
The Pacific  
Australia

Augustus Farnham  
William Hyde  
Burr Frost  
Absalom P. Dowdle  
Josiah W. Fleming  
Paul Smith

All the above named  
Elders who were to go  
East from this place  
were to be in Readiness  
to Start on their  
Missions in ten  
days from their  
apointment and

to be gon from three to seven years  
and those who were to go south or  
west were to be ready in the course  
of one month This Shows that  
the Elders ought to be always re-  
ady to start at the word

but this caul seemed to come  
upon all rather unexpectedly  
but those who were to go east  
met at the end of ten days  
and all with a few exceptions  
reported themselves Ready to start  
this was pleasing to the Prophet  
Brigham and his Council though  
they had not got all things ready  
for us to start consequently we had  
a few days more to prepare things a  
little more comfortable for our  
Families at home

On the 15<sup>th</sup> of September 1852  
about Eighty Souls started  
on our journey East across the  
Plaines a distance of 1030  
Miles to the nearest Inhabitation

to be gon from three to seven years  
and those who were to go South or  
west were to be ready in the course  
of one Month This shows that  
the Elders ought to be always re-  
ady to Start at the word

but this caul seemed to come  
upon all rather unexpectedly  
but those who were to go east  
meet at the end of ten days  
and all with a few exceptions  
reported themselves Ready to Start  
this was pleasing to the Prophet  
Brigham and his council though  
they had not got all things ready  
for us to Start concequently we had  
a few days more to prepare things a  
little more comfortable for our  
Families at home

On the 15th of September 1852  
about Eighty Souls started  
on our journey East across the  
Plaines a distance of 1030  
Miles to the nearest Inhabitation

But the first Presidency being <sup>73</sup> not  
yet quite ready for us to start  
for good we proceeded on our  
journey to the Mouth of Echo-  
Canon a distance of 35 or forty  
Miles <sup>from G. S. L. City</sup> and pitched  
our tents and remained there till  
the Message came that we were  
to Bare to <sup>the</sup> Nations of the Earth  
The Message is as follows

## Revelation

Given to Joseph Smith, Nauvoo  
July 14<sup>th</sup> 1843.)

Verily thus saith the Lord unto you  
my servant Joseph, that inasmuch  
as you have inquired of my hand to know  
and understand wherein I, the Lord,  
justified my servants, Abraham, Isaac,  
and Jacob, as also Moses, David and  
Solomon my servants, as teaching  
the principle and doctrine of their  
having many Wives, and Concubines:  
Behold! and lo, I am the Lord

But the first Presidency being not  
yet quite ready for us to Start  
for good we proceeded on our  
journey to the Mouth of Echo  
Canon a distance of 35 or forty  
Miles from G. S. L. City and pitched  
our tents and remained there till  
the Message came that we were  
to Bare to the Nations of the Earth  
The Message is as follows

## Revelation

Given to Joseph Smith, Nauvoo

July 14th 1843)

Verily thus Saith the Lord unto you  
my servant Joseph that inasmuch  
as you have inquired of my hand to know  
and understand wherein I the Lord  
justified my Servant, Abraham, Isaac  
and Jacob as also Moses, David and  
Solomon my Servants, as teaching  
the principle and doctrine of their  
having many Wives and concubines  
Behold! and lo, I am the Lord

<sup>74</sup>  
 thy God, and will answer thee as  
 touching this matter: Therefore, prepare  
 thy heart to receive and obey the instr-  
 uctions which I am about to give unto  
 you; for all those who have this law  
 revealed unto them, must obey the  
 Same; for behold! I reveal unto you  
 a new and an everlasting Covenant;  
 and if ye abide not that Covenant  
 then are ye damned; for no one  
 can reject this Covenant and be  
 permitted to enter into my Glory,  
 for all who will have a blessing at  
 my hands shall abide the law  
 which was appointed for that blessing,  
 and <sup>the</sup> conditions thereof, as was in-  
 stituted from before the founda-  
 tions of the world; and as per-  
 taining to the new and everlasting  
 Covenant, it was instituted for the  
 fulness of my Glory; and he that  
 receiveth a fulness thereof, must,  
 and shall abide the Law, or he  
 shall be damned, Saith the Lord

thy God, and will answer thee as  
 touching this matter: Therefore, prepare  
 thy heart to receive and obey the instr-  
 uctions which I am about to give unto  
 you: for all those who have this law  
 revealed unto them, must obey the  
 Same: for behold! I reveal unto you  
 a new and an everlasting Covenant:  
 and if ye abide not that Covenant  
 then are ye damned: for no one  
 can reject this Covenant and be  
 permitted to enter into my Glory  
 for all who will have a blessing at  
 my hands shall abide the law  
 which was appointed for that blessing  
 and the conditions thereof, as was in-  
 stituted from before the founda-  
 tions of the world, and as per-  
 taining to the new and everlasting  
 Covenant, it was instituted for the  
 fullness of my Glory; and he that  
 receiveth a fulness thereof must,  
 and shall abide the law, or he  
 shall be damned, Saith the Lord

75

God. And verily I say unto you  
that the conditions of this law are these  
:- All Covenants, Contracts, bonds, obligations,  
oaths, vows, performances, Connections,  
associations, or expectations, that are not  
made, and entered into, and sealed, by  
the Holy Spirit of promise of him  
who is anointed both as well for time  
and for all eternity, and that too most  
holy, by revelation and Command-  
ment, through the medium of mine  
anointed, whom I have appointed  
on the earth to hold this (and I have  
appointed unto my servant Joseph  
to hold this power in the last days,  
and there is never but one on the earth  
at a time, on whom this power  
and the keys of this Priesthood  
are conferred) are of no efficacy,  
virtue or force, in and after the res-  
urrection from the dead; for all con-  
tracts that are not made unto  
this end, have an end when <sup>men</sup> are  
dead. Behold! Mine house is a

87

God. and verily I say unto you  
that the conditions of this law are these  
:- all covenants, contracts, bonds, obligations  
oaths, vows, performances, conditons.  
associations, or expectations, that are not  
made, and entered into, and Sealed, by  
the Holy Spirit of promise of him  
who is anointed both as well for time  
and all eternity and that too most  
holy, by revelation and Command-  
ment, through the medium of mine  
anointed, whome I have appointed  
on the earth to hold this (and I have  
appointed unto my Servent Joseph  
to hold this power in the last days  
and there is never but one on the earth  
at a time, on whom this power  
and the Keys of this Priesthood  
are conferreed) are of no efficacy  
virtue or force, in and after the res-  
urrection from the dead; for all con-  
tracts that are not made unto  
this end, have an end when men are  
dead. Behold! Mine hous is a

76  
 hous of orde, saith the Lord God, and  
 not a house of confusion. Will I ex-  
 -ept of an offering, saith the Lord, that  
 is not made in my name! Or, will I  
 recieve at your hands that which I  
 have not appointed! And will I appo-  
 -int unto you, saith the Lord, except  
 it be by law, even as I and My Father  
 ordained unto you, before the world  
 was! I am the Lord thy God, and  
 I give unto you this commandment  
 that no man shall come unto the Father  
 but by me, or by my word, which is  
 my law, saith the Lord; and every  
 thing that is in the world, whether  
 it be ordained of men, by thrones or  
 principalities, or powers, or thing of  
 name, whatsoever they may be, that  
 are not by me, or by my word, saith  
 the Lord, shall be thrown down,  
 and shall not remain after men are  
 dead, neither in nor after the resur-  
 rection saith the Lord your God;  
 for whatsoever things remaineth.

hous of order, Saith the Lord God, and  
 not a house of confusion. Will I exc-  
 -ept of an offering, Saith the Lord, that  
 is not made in my name! or, will I  
 receive at your hands that which I  
 have not appointed! and will I appo-  
 -int unto you, saith the Lord, except  
 it be by law, even as I and My Father  
 ordained unto you, before the world  
 was! I am the Lord thy God, and  
 I give unto you this commandment  
 that no man shall come unto the Father  
 but by me, or by my word, which is  
 My law, Saith the Lord; and every  
 thing that is in the world, whether  
 it be ordained of men, by thrones or  
 principalities, or powers of thing of  
 name, whatsoever they may be. that  
 are not by me, or by my word, Saith  
 the Lord, shall be thrown down,  
 and shall not remain after men are  
 dead, neither in nor after the resu-  
 -rrection Saith the Lord your God;  
 for whatsoever things remaineth

77  
are by me; and whatsoever things are not by  
me, shall be shaken and destroyed.

Therefore, if a man marry him a wife  
in the world, and he marry her not by  
me, nor by my word; and he covenant  
with her, so long as he is in the world, and  
she with him, their covenant and marriage  
is not of force when they are dead, and  
when they are out of the world; therefore,  
they are not bound by any law when  
they are out of the world; they neither  
marry, nor are given in marriage, but  
are appointed angles in heaven, which  
angles are ministering servants, to minister  
for those who are worthy of a far more  
and an exceeding and an eternal weight  
of glory; for these angles did not abide  
my law, therefore they cannot be enlarged  
but remain separately and singly with-  
out exaltation, in their saved con-  
dition, to all eternity, and from hence-  
forth are not gods, but are angles  
of God for ever and ever.

And again, verily, I say unto you

are by me: and whatsoever things are not by  
me, shall be shaken and destroyed.

Therefore, if a man marry him a wife  
in the world, and he marry her not by  
me, nor by my word; and he covenant  
with her, so long as he is in the world, and  
she with him, their covenant and marriage  
is not of force when they are dead, and  
when they are out of the world; therefore,  
they are not bound by any law when  
they are out of the world; they neither  
marry, nor are given in marriage, but  
are appointed angles in heaven, which  
angles are ministering servants, to minister  
for those who are worthy of a far more  
and an exceeding and an eternal weight  
of glory; for these angles did not abide  
my law, therefore they cannot be enlarged  
but remain separately and single with-  
out exaltation, in their saved con-  
dition, to all eternity, and from hence-  
forth are not gods, but are angles  
of God for ever and ever

And again, verily I say unto you

if a man marry a wife, and make a  
 Covenant with her for time, and for all  
 eternity, if that Covenant is not by me, or  
 by My word, which is my law, and is  
 not sealed by the whole Spirit of  
 promise, through him whome I have  
 anointed and appointed unto this  
 power, - then it is not valid, neither  
 of force, when they are out of the world  
 because they are not joined by me,  
 saith the Lord, neither by my word;  
 when they are out of the world  
 it cannot be received there, because  
 the angles and the Gods are appointed  
 there, by whome they cannot pass;  
 they cannot, therefore, inherit my glory;  
 for my house is a house of order, saith  
 the Lord God.

And again, verily I say unto  
 you, if a man marry a wife by my wo-  
 rd, which is my law, and by the new  
 and everlasting Covenant, and it  
 is sealed unto them by the whole  
 Spirit of promise, by him who

if a man marry a wife, and make a  
 Covenant with her for time, and for all  
 eternity, if that covenant is not by me, or  
 by my word, which is my law, and is  
 not Sealed by the whole Spirit of  
 promise, through him whome I have  
 anointed and appointed unto this  
 power, - then it is not valid, neither  
 of force, when they are out of the world  
 because they are not joined by me,  
 Saith the Lord, neither by my word;  
 when they are out of the world,  
 it cannot be received there, because  
 the angles and the Gods are appointed  
 there, by whome they cannot pass;  
 they cannot, therefore, inherit my glory  
 for my house is a house of order, saith  
 the Lord God.

And again, verily I say unto  
 you, if a man marry a wife by My wo-  
 rd, which is My law, and by the new  
 and everlasting Covenant, and it  
 is Sealed unto them by the whole  
 Spirit of promise, by him who



79  
is anointed, unto whom I have appointed  
this power, and the keys of this priesthood  
and it shall be said unto them, ye shall  
come forth in the first resurrection; and  
if it be after the first resurrection,  
in the next resurrection; and shall  
inherit thrones, kingdoms, principalities,  
and powers, dominions, all heights and  
depths—then shall it be written in the  
Lamb's Book of life that he shall  
commit no murder, whereby to shed  
innocent blood, and if ye abide  
in my covenant, and commit no mur-  
der whereby to shed innocent blood,  
it shall be done unto them in all things  
whatsoever my servant hath put upon  
them, in time and through all eternity  
and shall be of full force when they  
are out of the world, and they shall  
pass by the angels, and the Gods, which  
are set there, to their exaltation  
and glory in all things, as hath been  
sealed upon their heads, which glo-  
ry shall be a fulness and a contin-

is anointed, unto whom I have appointed  
this power, and the keys of this priesthood  
and it shall be said unto them, ye shall  
come forth in the first resurrection; and  
if it be after the first resurrection,  
in the next resurrection; and shall  
inherit thrones, kingdoms, principalities,  
and powers, dominions, all heights and  
depths—then shall it be written in the  
Lamb's Book of life that he shall  
commit no murder, whereby to shed  
innocent blood, and if ye abide  
in my covenant, and commit no mur-  
der whereby to shed innocent blood  
it shall be done unto them in all things  
whatsoever my servant hath put upon  
them, in time and through all eternity  
and shall be of full force when they  
are out of the world, and they shall  
pass by the angels, and the Gods, which  
are set there, to their exaltation  
and glory in all things, as hath been  
sealed upon their heads, which glo-  
ry shall be a fulness and a contin-

80  
 nation of the Seeds for ever and ever.

Then shall they be Gods, because they have no end; therefore shall they be from everlasting to everlasting, because they continue; then shall they be above all, because all things are subject unto them. Then shall they be Gods, because they have all power, and the angles are subject unto them.

Verily, verily I say unto you, except ye abide my law, ye cannot attain to this glory; for strait is the gate, and narrow the way that leadeth into the exaltation and continuation of the lives and few there be that find it, because ye receive me not in the world neither do ye know me. But if ye receive me in the world, then shall ye know me, and shall receive your exaltation; that where I am, ye shall be also. This is eternal lives to know the only wise and true God, and Jesus Christ whom He hath sent. I am he,

uation of the Seeds for ever and ever.  
 Then Shalt they be Gods, because they have no ends; therefore shall they be from everlasting to everlasting, because they continue; then Shall they be above all, because all things are subject unto them. Then Shall they be Gods, because they have all power and the angles are Subject unto them.

Verily, verily I say unto you, except ye abide My law, ye cannot attain to this Glory; for strait is the gate, and narrow the way that leadeth unto the exaltation and continuation of the lives and few there be that find it, because ye receive me not in the world neither do ye know me. But if ye receive me in the world, then shall ye know Me, and Shall receive your exaltation; that where I am, ye Shall be also. This is eternal lives to know the only wise and true God, and Jesus Christ whom He hath sent. I am he,

Recieve ye, therefore, my law, <sup>St</sup> Broad  
is the gate, and wide the way that leadeth  
to the death; and many there are that  
go in thereat; because they recieve me not,  
neither do they abide in my law.

Verily, verily I say unto you, if a man  
marry a wife according to my word and  
they are sealed by the Holy Spirit of pro-  
mise according to mine appointment,  
and he or she shall commit any sin  
or transgression of the new and ever-  
lasting covenant whatever, and all man-  
ner of blasphemies, and if they commit  
no murder wherein they shed innocent  
blood, yet they shall come forth in the  
first resurrection and enter into their  
exaltation; but they shall be destroyed  
in the flesh, and shall be delivered  
unto the buffetings of Satan unto the  
day of redemption saith the Lord God.

The blasphemy against the Holy Ghost  
which shall not be forgiven in the  
world nor out of the world is in that  
ye commit murder, wherein ye shed

Recieve ye, therefore, my laws Broad  
is the gate, and wide the way that leadeth  
to the death; and many there are that  
go in thereat; because they recieve me not,  
neither do they abide in my law.

Verily, verily I say unto you, if a man  
marry a wife according to my word and  
they are sealed by the Holy Spirit of Pro-  
mise according to mine appointment,  
and he or she shall commit any sin  
or transgression of the new and ever-  
lasting covenant whatever, and all man-  
ner of blasphemies, and if they commit  
no murder wherein they shed innocent  
blood yet they shall come forth in the  
first resurrection and enter into their  
exaltation; but they shall be destroyed  
in the flesh, and shall be delivered  
unto the buffetings of Satan unto the  
day of redemption Saith the Lord God.  
The blasphemy against the Holy Ghost  
which shall not be forgiven in the  
world nor out of the world is in that  
ye commit murder, wherein ye shed

innocent blood and assent unto my death after ye have received my new and everlasting Covenant, saith the Lord God; and he that abideth not this law can in no wise enter into my Glory, but shall be damned. Saith the Lord God.

I am the Lord thy God, and will give unto thee the law of my Holy Priesthood as was ordained by me before the world was.

Abraham received all things whatsoever he received by revelation and commandment by my word saith the Lord; and hath entered into his exaltation and sitteth upon his throne.

Abraham received promises concerning his seed, and of the fruit of his loines from whose loines ye are, viz, my servant Joseph which were to continue; so long as they were in the world; and as touching Abraham and his seed; out of

Innocent blood and assent unto My death after ye have received my new and everlasting Covenant Saith the Lord God; and he that abideth not this law can in no wise enter into my Glory but shall be damned Saith the Lord God.

I am the Lord thy God, and will give unto thee the law of my Holy Priesthood as was ordained by Me and my Father before the world was.

Abraham received all things whatsoever he received by revelation and commandment by My word Saith the Lord; and hath entered into his exaltation and sitteth upon his throne

Abraham received promises concerning his seed, and of the fruit of his loines from whose loines ye are, viz My servant Joseph which were to continue; so long as they were in the world; and as touching Abraham and his Seed; out of

83

the world, they should continue; both  
in the world and out of the world.  
Should they continue as innumerable  
as the stars; or if ye were to count the  
sand upon the seashore, ye could not  
number them. This promise is yours,  
also, because ye are of Abraham and  
the promise was made unto Abraham;  
and by this law are the continuation of  
the works of my Father wherein He  
glorifieth himself. Go ye therefore,  
and do the works of Abraham; enter  
ye into my law, and ye shall be saved.

But if ye enter not into my law  
ye cannot receive the promises of my  
Father, which He maid unto Abraham.

God Commanded Abraham and Sarah  
gave Hagar to Abraham to wife. And  
why did She do it? Because this was  
the law, and from Hagar sprang  
many people. This therefore was  
fulfilling, among other things, the  
promises. Was Abraham therefore, under  
condemnation? Verily I say unto you

95

the world, they should continue; both  
in the world and out of the world  
Should they continue as innumerable  
as the Stars; or if you were to count the  
Sand upon the seashore you could not  
number them. This promise is yours,  
also, because ye are of Abraham and  
the promise was made unto Abraham  
and by this law are the continuation of  
the works of My Father wherein He  
glorifieth himself, Go ye therefore,  
and do the works of Abraham; enter  
ye into my law, and ye shall be saved.  
But if ye enter not into my law  
ye cannot receive the promises of my  
Father, which He maid unto Abraham.  
God commanded Abraham and Sarah  
gave Hagar to Abraham to wife. And  
why did She do it? Because this was  
the law, and from Hagar sprang  
many people. This therefore was  
fulfilling, among other things, the  
promises. Was Abraham therefore under  
condemnation? Verily I say unto you

44  
Nay: for I, the Lord, Commanded it.

Abraham was Commanded to offer his son Isaac; nevertheless, it was written, thou Shalt not Kill. Abraham however, did not refuse, and it was counted unto him for righteousness

Abraham received Concubines, and they bare him Children, and it was accounted unto him for righteousness because they were given unto him; and he abode in my law; as Isaac also, and Jacob did none other things than that which they were Commanded; they having entered into their exaltation, according to the promises, and sit upon thrones; and are not angles, but are Gods.

David also received many Wives and Concubines, as also Solomon and Moses my servants; as also many others of my servants, from the beginning of creation until this time; and in nothing did they sin save in those things which

Nay: for I the Lord, Commanded it.

Abraham was Commanded to offer his son Isaac: nevertheless, it was written, thou Shalt not Kill. Abraham however, did not refuse, and it was accounted unto him for righteousness

Abraham received Concubines, and they bare him Children, and it was accounted unto him for righteousness because they were given unto him, and he abode in my law;

as Isaac also, and Jacob did none other things than that which they were commanded; they having entered into their exaltation, according to the promises, and sit upon thrones; and are not angles, but are Gods.

David also received many Wives and Concubines, as also Solomon and Moses my servants; as also many others of my servants, from the beginning of creation until this time; and in nothing did they sin save in those things which

85  
they received not of me. David's  
Wives and Concubines were given unto  
him, of me, by the hand of Nathan,  
my servant, and others of the Proph-  
-ets who had the keys of this power;  
and in none of these things did he  
sin against me, save in the case of  
Uriah and his wife; and, therefore,  
he hath fallen from his exaltation,  
and received his portion; and he shall  
not inherit them out of the world;  
for I gave them unto another, saith  
the Lord.

I am the Lord thy God, and I  
gave unto thee my servant Joseph,  
an appointment and restore all  
things; ask what ye will, and it  
shall be given unto you according  
to my word; and as ye have asked  
concerning adultery, verily, verily I  
say unto you, if a man receiveth a  
wife in the new and everlasting cove-  
nant, and if she be with a nother man  
and I have not appointed unto her

they received not of me. David's  
Wives and concubines were given unto  
Him, of me, by the hand of Nathan,  
my Servant, and others of the Proph-  
-ets who had the Keys of this power;  
and in none of these things did he  
Sin against Me, save in the case of  
Uriah and his wife; and, therefore,  
he hath fallen from his exaltation  
and received his portion; and he shall  
not inherit them out of the world;  
for I gave them unto another, saith  
the Lord.

I am the Lord thy God, and I  
gave unto thee my Servant Joseph,  
an appointment and restore all  
things; ask what ye will, and it  
shall be given unto you according  
to My word; and as ye have asked  
concerning adultery, verily, verily, I  
Say unto you, if a man receiveth a  
wife in the new and everlasting cove-  
-nant and if she be with a nother man  
and I have not appointed unto her

by the Holy anointing, She hath Com-  
 mitted adultery, and shall be destroyed.  
 If she be not in the new and  
 everlasting Covenant, and she be with  
 another man, she has committed ad-  
 ultery; and if her husband be with  
 another woman and he was under  
 a vow, he hath Broken his vow  
 and hath committed adultery; and  
 if she hath not committed adultery  
 but is innocent, and hath not  
 Broken her vow and she knoweth  
 it, and I reveal it unto you, my  
 servant Joseph, then shall you  
 have power, by the power of my  
 Holy Priesthood, to take her, and  
 give her unto him that hath not  
 committed adultery, but hath been  
 faithful; for he shall be made ruler  
 over many; for I have conferred  
 upon you the Keys and power  
 of the Priesthood, wherein I  
 restore all things, and make  
 known unto you all things in

by the Holy anointing, She hath Com-  
 mitted adultery and shall be destroyed.  
 If She be not in the new and  
 everlasting Covenant, and She be with  
 another man, She has committed ad-  
 ultery; and if her husband be with  
 another woman and he was under  
 a vow, he hath Broken his vow  
 and hath committed adultery; and  
 if She hath not committed adultery  
 but is innocent, and hath not  
 Broken her vow and She knoweth  
 it, and I reveal it unto you, my  
 servant Joseph, then shall you  
 have power, by the power of my  
 Holy Priesthood, to take her, and  
 give her unto him that hath not  
 Committed adultery, but hath been  
 faithful; for he shall be made ruler  
 over many; for I have conferred  
 upon you the Keys and power  
 of the Priesthood, wherein I  
 restore all things, and make  
 known unto you all things in



87

due time. And verily, verily I say unto you, that whatsoever you seal on earth, shall be sealed in heaven; and whatsoever you bind on earth in my name, and by my word saith the Lord, it shall be eternally bound in the heavens; and whosoever sins you remit on earth, shall be remitted eternally in the heavens; and whosoever sins you retain on earth shall be retained in heaven.

And again, verily, I say, whomsoever you bless, I will bless; and whomsoever you curse, I will curse saith the Lord, for I the Lord am thy God.

And again, verily, I say unto you my servant Joseph, that whatsoever you give on earth, and to whomever you give any one on earth by my word and according to my law it shall be visited with blessings, and not cursings, and with my power, saith the Lord, and shall be without condemnation on earth and in heaven.

89

due time. And verily, verily I say unto you, that whatsoever you seal on earth, shall be sealed in the heaven; and whatsoever you bind on earth in My name and by my word saith the Lord, it shall be eternally bound in the heavens; and whosoever sins you remit on earth, shall be remitted eternally in the heavens; and whosoever Sins you retain on earth shall be retained in heaven.

And again, Verily, I say, whomsoever you bless I will bless; and whomsoever you curse, I will curse saith the Lord, for I the Lord am thy God. And again, verily I say unto you my servant Joseph, that whatsoever you give on earth, and to whomever you give any one on earth by my word and according to law it shall be visited with blessings, and not cursings, and with My power, saith the Lord, and shall be without condemnation on earth and in heaven.

for I am the Lord thy God, and will be with thee even unto the end of the world, and through all eternity; for verily, I seal upon you your exaltation, and prepare a throne for you in the Kingdom of my Father, with Abraham your father.

Behold, I have seen your sacrifices, and will forgive all your sins; I have seen your sacrifices in obedience to that which I have told you; go, therefore, and I make a way for your escape, as I accepted the offering of Abraham, of his son Isaac.

Verily, I say unto you, a commandment I give unto mine handmaid, Emma Smith, your wife, whom I have given unto you, that she stay herself, and partake not of that which I commanded you to offer unto her; for I did it, saith the Lord, to prove you all, as I did Abr-

for I am the Lord thy God, and will be with thee even unto the end of the world, and through all eternity; for verily, I seal upon you your exaltation and prepare a throne for you in the Kingdom of my Father, with Abraham your father. Behold, I have seen your sacrifices, and will forgive all your sins; I have seen your sacrifices in obedience to that which I have told you; go, therefore, and I make a way for your escape, as I accepted the offering of Abraham, of his son Isaac.

Verily I say unto you A Commandment I give unto mine handmaid, Emma Smith, your wife, whom I have given unto you, that she stay herself, and partake not of that which I commanded you to offer unto her, for I did it, saith the Lord, to prove you all, as I did Abr-

89  
 -aham; and that I might require  
 an offering at your hand by Covenant  
 and sacrifice; and let mine handmaid  
 Emma Smith, receive all those that  
 have been given unto my servant  
 Joseph and who are virtuous and  
 pure before me; and those who are  
 not pure, and have said they were  
 pure, shall be destroyed, saith the  
 Lord God; for I am the Lord thy  
 God, and ye shall obey my voice;  
 and I give unto my servant  
 Joseph, that he shall be maid ruler  
 over many things, for he hath been  
 faithful over a few things, and from  
 hence forth I will strengthen him.

And I command mine handmaid  
 Emma Smith to abide and cleave unto  
 my servant Joseph and to none else,  
 But if she will not abide this  
 commandment she shall be destroyed,  
 saith the Lord; for I am the Lord  
 thy God, and will destroy her if  
 she abide not in my law; but if

-aham; and that I might require  
 an offering at your hand by covenant  
 and Sacrifice; and let mine handmaid  
 Emma Smith, receive all those that  
 have been given unto my servant  
 Joseph and who are virtuous and  
 pure before me; and those who are  
 not pure, and have said they were  
 pure, shall be destroyed, saith the  
 Lord God; for I am the Lord thy  
 God, and ye shall obey my voice;  
 and I give unto my servant  
 Joseph, that he shall be maid ruler  
 over many things, for he hath been  
 faithful over a few things, and from  
 hence forth I will strengthen him.  
 And I command mine handmaid  
 Emma Smith to abide and cleave unto  
 my Servant Joseph and none else,  
 But if she will not abide this  
 commandment she shall be destroyed,  
 saith the Lord; for I am the Lord  
 thy God, and will destroy her if  
 she abide not in my law; but if

She will not abide this commandment, then shall my servant Joseph do all things for her, even as he hath said; and I will bless him, and multiply him, and give unto him an hundred fold in this world, of Fathers and Mothers, brothers and sisters, houses and lands, wives and Children and crowns of eternal lives in the eternal worlds. And again, verily I say, let mine handmaid forgive my servant Joseph his trespasses and then, shall she be forgiven her trespasses wherein she hath trespassed against me; and I, the Lord thy God will bless her, and multiply her, and make her heart to rejoice.

And again, I say, let not my servant Joseph put his property out of his hands, lest an enemy come and destroy him; for Satan seeketh to destroy; for I am the Lord thy God, and he is my servant; and behold

She will not abide this commandment, then shall my servant Joseph do all things for her, even as he hath said; and I will bless him, and multiply him, and give unto him an hundred fold in this world, of Fathers and Mothers, brothers and sisters, houses and lands, wives and Children and crowns of eternal lives in the eternal worlds. And again, verily I say, let mine handmaid forgive my servant Joseph his trespasses and then shall she be forgiven her trespasses wherein she hath trespassed against me; and I, the Lord thy God will bless her, and multiply her, and make her heart to rejoice. And again, I say, let not my servant Joseph put his property out of his hands lest an enemy come and destroy him; for Satan seeketh to destroy; for I am the Lord thy God, and he is my servant; and behold

and lo, I am with him, as I was with  
Abraham, thy Father even unto his  
exaltation and glory.

Now, as touching the law of the  
Priesthood, there are many things p-  
rtaining thereunto. Verily, if a man  
be called of my Father, as was Aaron,  
by mine own voice, and by the voice  
of him that sent me; and I have  
endowed him with the keys of the  
power of this Priesthood, if he do  
anything in my name, and according  
to my law, and by my word, he will  
not commit sin, and I will justify  
him. Let no one, therefore, set on  
my servant Joseph; for I will  
justify him; for he shall do the  
sacrifice which I require at his  
hands, for his transgressions, saith  
the Lord your God.

And again, as pertaining to the  
law of the Priesthood: If any man  
espouse a virgin, and desire to espouse  
another, and the first give her consent

and lo, I am with him, as I was with  
Abraham thy Father even unto his  
exaltation and Glory.

Now, as touching the law of the  
Priesthood, there are many things p-  
rtaining thereunto. Verily, if a man  
be called of My Father, as was Aaron,  
by mine own voice, and by the voice  
of him that sent me; and I have  
endowed him with the keys of the  
power of this Priesthood, if he do  
anything in my name, and according  
to my law, and by my word, he will  
not commit sin, and I will justify  
him. Let no one, therefore, set on  
My servant Joseph; for I will  
justify him; for he shall do the  
sacrifice which I require at his  
hands, for his transgressions, saith  
the Lord your God.

And again, as pertaining to the  
law of the Priesthood: If any man  
espouse a virgin, and desire to espouse  
another and the first give her consent

92  
 and if he espouse the second, and they  
 are virgins, and have vowed to no  
 other man, then is he justified;  
 he cannot commit adultery, for  
 they are given unto him; for he  
 cannot commit adultery with that  
 that belongeth unto him and to  
 none else; and if he have ten  
 virgins given unto him by this  
 law, he cannot commit adultery;  
 for they belong to him, and they  
 are given unto him, therefore  
 is he justified. But if one or  
 either of the ten virgins, after  
 she is espoused, shall be with  
 another man, she has committed  
 adultery, and shall be destroyed;  
 for they are given unto him to  
 multiply and replenish the earth  
 according to my commandment,  
 and to fulfil the promise which  
 was given by my Father before  
 the foundation of the world;  
 and for their exaltation in the

and if he espouse the second, and they  
 are virgins, and have vowed to no  
 other man, then is he justified;  
 he cannot commit adultery, for he  
 cannot commit adultery with that  
 what belongeth unto him and to  
 none else; and if he have ten  
 virgins given unto him by this  
 law he cannot commit adultery,  
 for they belong to him, and they  
 are given unto him, therefore  
 is he justified. But if one or  
 either of the ten virgins, after  
 she is espoused, shall be with  
 another man, she has committed  
 adultery, and shall be destroyed;  
 for they are given unto him to  
 multiply and replenish the earth  
 according to my commandment,  
 and to fulfil the promise which  
 was given by my Father before  
 the foundation of the world;  
 and for their exaltation in the

93  
eternal worlds, that they may bear the  
soules of men; for herein is the work  
of my Father continued, that he may  
be glorified.

And again, verily I say unto you  
if any man have a wife who holds  
the keys of this power, and he teaches  
unto her the law of my Priesthood,  
as pertaining to these things, then  
shall she believe, and administer  
unto him, or she shall be destroyed  
saith the <sup>Lord</sup> your God; for I will  
destroy her; for I will magnify my  
name upon those who receive and  
abide in my law. Therefore, it shall  
be lawful in me, if she receive not  
this law for him to receive all  
things, whatsoever I, the Lord his  
God, will give unto him, because  
she did not believe and admin-  
ister unto him according to my  
word; and she then becomes the  
transgressor; and he is exempt  
from the law of Sarrah.

eternal worlds, that they may bear the  
souls of men; for herein is the work  
of My Father continued, that he may  
be glorified.

And again, verily I say unto you  
if any man have a wife who holds  
the keys of this power, and he teaches  
unto her the law of my Priesthood,  
as pertaining to these things, then  
shall she believe and administer  
unto him, or she shall be destroyed  
saith the Lord your God; for I will  
destroy her; for I will magnify My  
Name upon those who receive and  
abide in My law. Therefore, it shall  
be lawful in Me, if she receive not  
this law for him to receive all  
things, whatsoever I, the Lord his  
God, will give unto him, because  
she did not believe and admin-  
-ister unto him according to my  
word; and she then becomes the  
transgressor; and he is exempt  
from the law of Sarrah.

94  
 who administered unto Abraham  
 according to the law, when I Com-  
 manded Abraham to take Hagar  
 to wife. And now, as pertaining  
 to this law verily, verily I say  
 unto you I will reveal more  
 unto you hereafter; therefore  
 let this suffice for the pres-  
 -ant. Behold, I am alpha and  
 Omega. Amen.

The above Revelation and  
 various other instructions were  
 Printed in a Pamphlet and  
 given to us to take with us  
 on our mission to the different parts  
 of the earth. ...

We were forty days acrossing  
 the Plains we had meetings wose  
 or twice a week while on the  
 Plains and all enjoyed our  
 selves firstrate Brother <sup>Orson</sup> Pratt  
 one of the Twelve and Brother  
 Orson Spencer were with us

who administered unto Abraham  
 according to the law, when I Com-  
 manded Abraham to take Hagar  
 to wife. And now, as pertaining  
 to this law verily, verily I say  
 unto you I will reveal more  
 unto you hereafter; therefore  
 let this suffice for the pres-  
 -ant. Behold, I am Alpha and  
 Omega. Amen

The above Revelation and  
 various other instructions were  
 Printed in a Pamphlet and  
 given to us to take with us  
 on our mision to the diferent parts  
 of the earth.

We were forty days a crossing  
 the Plains and all enjoyed our  
 selves firstrate Brother Orson Pratt  
 one of the Twelve and Brother  
 Orson Spencer were with us



and gave us much good instruction <sup>95</sup>  
we were prospered on our journey had  
no bad luck but all to the frontiers  
in safety, and this was the last of  
our traveling together in a Body, but  
we scattered in small Companies from  
two to ten in a mess, and in this  
way we went through the States to  
the City of New York as also to  
Boston and Philadelphia where we  
took shipping for Liverpool in England  
the most of us started from the  
City of New York

We landed on the Banks of the  
Missisaura River on the 3<sup>rd</sup> day of  
November crossed the River the same  
day went two Miles and Camped  
for the night and in the morning  
of the 4<sup>th</sup> our camp broke up and  
each man took that which bel-  
onged to him as much as possible  
and disposed of it the best he could  
to get means to help him across  
the sea. The property that we

and gave us much good instructions  
we were prospered on our journey, had  
no bad luck but all to the frontiers  
in safety, and this was the last of  
our traveling together in a Body. but  
we scattered in small companies from  
two to ten in a mess, and in this  
way we went through the States to  
the City of New York as also to  
Bosten and Philladelphia where we  
took shipping for Liverpool in England  
the most of us started from the  
City of New York

We landed on the Banks of the  
Missisaura River on the 3<sup>rd</sup> day of  
November crossed the River the Same  
day went two miles and Camped  
for the night and in the Morning  
of the 4<sup>th</sup> our camp broke up and  
and each man took that which bel-  
onged to him as much as possible  
and disposed of it the best he could  
to get means to help him across  
the sea. The property that we

96  
 had consisted in Horses Harnesses  
 and Waggon; as we had four  
 Horses and a Waggon to evry four  
 persons in Crossing the Plains

I took my Horse and went  
 up the River 30 Miles to see  
 Mr Gye Barnum his wife was  
 a Sister to my Wife. I got there  
 after dark I met him about  
 a halfe a Mile from his house  
 and it was so dark that we could  
 not see eachother at any distance  
 but I spoke to him and he  
 knew me by my voice. though we  
 had not met before for nearly five  
 years. he turned round and  
 went back with me to his house. I  
 went into the house carlesly to see  
 if Myrandy his wife would know  
 me at first, and soon as I maid my  
 appearance I was detected by her  
 They were boath glad to see me  
 they maid all enquiry about their  
 friends that lived in the Vallies

had consisted in Horses Harnesses  
 and Waggon; as we had four  
 Horses and a Waggon to evry four  
 persons in Crossing the plains  
 I took my Horse and went  
 up the River 30 Miles to see  
 Mr. Gye Barnum his wife was  
 a sister to my Wife. I got there  
 after dark I met him about  
 a halfe a mile from his house  
 and it was so dark that we could  
 not see eachother at any distance  
 but I spoke to him and he  
 knew me by my voice though we  
 had not met before for nearly five  
 years. he turned round and  
 went back with me to his house. I  
 went into the house carlesly to see  
 if Myrandy his wife would know  
 me at first, and soon as I maid my  
 appearance I was detected by her  
 They were boath glad to see me  
 they maid all enquiry about their  
 friends that lived in the Vallies

Mr Barnum and wife had left the <sup>97</sup> Latter-day Saints and joined a sect called Nemeites. The people that composed this sect were all apostates who had left the Mormon Church. I tried to reason with Mr Barnum and wife and persuade them to return and forsake such foolishness but to no effect for they were surely blinded and were willing to remain so. I stayed with them till the 7<sup>th</sup> and then took my departure for New York. I landed in Saint-Joseph 13<sup>th</sup> stayed over night engaged my passage on board the Steamer Clarria bound for Saint-Louis. In the morning went on board took Cabin passage, landed in Saint-Louis on the 19<sup>th</sup>. Stayed in this City till the 24<sup>th</sup>. Had a pleasant voyage down the River and a good time in this place in visiting the few Saints and looking at the curiosities in different parts of the City.

Mr. Barnum and wife had left the Later day Saints and joined a sect called Nemeites. The people that composed this sect were all apostates who had left the Mormon Church. I tried to reason with Mr. Barnum and wife and persuade them to return and forsake such foolishness but to no effect for they were surely blinded and were willing to remain so. I stayed with them till the 7<sup>th</sup> and then took my departure for New York. I landed in Saint-Joseph 13<sup>th</sup> stayed over night engaged my passage on board the Steamer Clarria bound for Saint Louis. In the morning went on board took Cabin passage, landed in Saint-Louis on the 19<sup>th</sup>. Stayed in this City till the 24<sup>th</sup>. Had a pleasant voyage down the River and a good time in this place in visiting the few Saints and looking at the curiosities in different parts of the City.

98  
 from Saint Joseph to this City I was  
 with 7 or 8 of the Elders and while  
 we were in this City the Elders kept  
 coming in till some 20 had got  
 to gether again, and on the  
 morning of the 24<sup>th</sup> about 12  
 or 15 of us engaged our passage  
 on board the Steamer Hamburg  
 bound for the City of Cincinnati  
 we all took Cabin passage

had a first rate time, there was  
 a Catholic Priest on board he  
 tackled the Elders but got his  
 fill he was used up to the satis-  
 -faction of all present from the  
 Captain down. we landed in  
 Cincinnati on the 28<sup>th</sup> stayed  
 over night, the 29<sup>th</sup> went aboard  
 the ~~Railroad~~ express train on  
 the Miami Railroad ticketed  
 through to N. Y., we landed in  
 Cleveland 7 P. M. left at 8 P. M.  
 landed in Dunkirk 30<sup>th</sup> at 4 A. M.  
 left the same morning at 10 o'clock

from Saint Joseph to this City I was  
 with 7 or 8 of the Elders and while  
 we were in this City the Elders kept  
 coming in till some 20 had got  
 together again, and on the  
 morning of the 24<sup>th</sup> about 12  
 or 15 of us engaged our passage  
 on board the Steamer Hamburg  
 bound for the City of Cincinnati  
 we all took Cabin passage  
 had a first rate time, there was  
 a Catholic Priest on board he  
 tackled the Elders but got his  
 fill he was used up to the Satti-  
 -faction of all present from the  
 Captain down. we landed in  
 Cincinnati on the 28<sup>th</sup> stayed  
 over night. the 29<sup>th</sup> went aboard  
 the express train on  
 the Miami Railroad ticketed  
 through to N. Y. we landed in  
 Cleveland 7 P. M. left at 8 P. M.  
 landed in Dunkirk 30<sup>th</sup> at 4 A. M.  
 left the same morning at 10 o'clock

99

and landed in the City of New York  
on the 31<sup>st</sup> at 10 A.M. all safe and  
sound and in good spirits although  
the most of us were without money  
which was not so pleasant in a large  
City like this, I had but three  
Dollars and Brother John Okley  
had but five Cents this is a spe-  
-ssamen of the circumstances of the  
-rest. We met in Council after  
-finding a place to put our things  
-and to stay over night, and it  
-was decided that we should sea-  
-tter out among the different Bran-  
-ches of the Church and see if we  
-couldnt make a raise of some mo-  
-nes to help us across the sea to  
-Liverpool. And it was decided  
-that I and an other Elder (whose name  
-has slipped my memory) should go to  
-Philladelphia and Brothers Attwood  
-and Earl should go to the north  
-River Branch and others had  
-their places assigned them

and landed in the City of New York  
on the 31st at 10 A. M. all safe and  
sound and in good spirits although  
the most of us were without money  
which was not so pleasant in a large  
City like this, I had but three  
Dollars and Brother John Okley  
had but five cents this a spe-  
-ssamen of the circumstances of the  
-rest. We met in council after  
-finding a place to put our things  
-and to stay over night, and it  
-was decided that we should sca-  
-tter out among the different Bran-  
-ches of the Church and see if we  
-couldnt make a raise of some mo-  
-nes to help us across the sea to  
-Liverpool. and it was decided  
-that I and an other Elder (whose name  
-has slipped my memory) should go to  
-Philladelphia and Brothers Attwood  
-and Earl should go to the north  
-River Branch and others had  
-their places assigned to them

December the 1<sup>st</sup> at 4 P. M.

I and Companion started for Philadelphia we took passage on a Steamer and landed in Philadelphia the 2<sup>nd</sup> at 5 P. M. found the President of the Branch and staid over night with him, he treated us kindly and took us to meny of the Saints through the day. Stayed with him all the time we stayed in the City; the 4<sup>th</sup> being Sunday we meet with the Saints in a fine Hall had a good time Saints all seemed to fell quite revived in their Spirits, here is where I spoke in publick the first time and I was scart badly, but lived through it and done well after. The President laid our case before the Saints and they raised \$40 Dollars quick time to help us on our way to Urop Monday the 5<sup>th</sup> we left for the City New York at 10 A. M. on board a Rail Car, and landed in N. Y.

December the 1st at 4 P. M.

I and Companion started for Philadelphia we took passage on a Steamer and landed in Philadelphia the 2<sup>nd</sup> at 5 P. M. found the President of the Branch and Staid over night with him, he treated us Kindly and took us to meny of the Saints through the day. Stayed with him all the time we stayed in the City; the 4<sup>th</sup> being Sunday we meet with the Saints in a fine Hall had a good time Saints all seemed to fell quite revived in their Spirits, here is where I Spoke in publick the first time and I was Scart badly, but lived through it and done well after. The President laid our case before the Saints and they raised \$40 Dollars quick time to help us on our way to Urop Monday the 5<sup>th</sup> we left for the City of New York at 10 A. M. on board a Rail Car and landed in N. Y.

101  
at 5 P.M. all well and <sup>while</sup> on our return we fell in company with Brothers Atwood and Earl they had met with the same success, had got \$40 to help them, and the rest of the Elders had met with the same blessings so that we had means to do us so that we could proceute our journey, we then went to find a ship that would take us across the sea. we engaged our passage on board the ship American Union it was a N.Y. Liners by this time there was 21 Elders Collected and we all went on board this ship, the Rooms that we occupied, we had holy to ourselves this was quite a privilage. for we could have our prayers and meetings without being dis-turbed by the rest of the passagers, we stayed in the City Newyork till the 15<sup>th</sup> on this day we got all our things aboard the ship so as to be ready to go out into the Sound the

113  
at 5 P. M. all well and while on our return we fell in company with Brothers Atwood and Earl they had met with the same success, had got \$40 to help them and the rest of the Elders had met with the same blessings so that we had means to do us so that we could proceute on our journey, we then went to find a Ship that would take us across the Sea. We engaged our passage on board the Ship American Union it was a N. Y. Liner, by this time there was 21 Elders Collected and we all went on board this Ship, the Rooms that we occupied, we had holy to ourselves this was quite a privilage. for we could have our prayers and meetings without being distirbed by the rest of the passagers, we stayed in the City New York till the 15th on this day we got all our things aboard the Ship so as to be ready to go out into the Sound the

102  
 next day it being the 16<sup>th</sup> Dec  
 the Ship left the Dock about 10  
 O'clock and went out a few miles  
 and cast Anchor for the rest of  
 the end night, at 12 O'clock  
 on the 17<sup>th</sup> the tugg Steamer  
 hiched on to the Vessil and  
 the Anchor was weight and we  
 were towed out to the open sea  
 and then we were left a flote  
 had a firstrate wind and  
 the Sea was purty rough and  
 the Elders all got Seasick save  
 five and I was one of the Luc-  
 key Boys, I enjoyed myself all the  
 way across the Sea. the best kind.

The Ship sometimes was up one  
 Side and down the other and up  
 Bow and down stern and the  
 waves of the raging sea coming  
 over the Bullworks sweeping things  
 from one side of the Deck to the  
 other. and the Chests and Boxes  
 that were between Decks getting

next day it being the 16th Dec-  
 the ship left the Dock about 10  
 O'clock and went out a few miles  
 and cast anchor for the rest of  
 the night, at 12 O'clock  
 on the 17th the tugg Steamer  
 hiched on to the Vessil and  
 the Anchor was Weight and we  
 were towed out to the open Sea  
 and then we were left a flote  
 had a firstrate wind and  
 the Sea was purty rough and  
 the Elders all got Seasick Save  
 five and I was one of the Luc-  
 key Boys, I enjoyed myself all the  
 way across the Sea. the best kind.  
 The ship sometimes was up one  
 side and down the other and up  
 bow and down stern and the  
 waves of the raging Sea coming  
 over the Bullworks sweeping things  
 from one side of the Deck to the  
 other, and the Chests and Boxes  
 that were between Decks getting



loose and going from one side of  
the Cabin to the other Men and  
Woman Slipping down and going  
with the Boxes on all fours &c.

This to me was quite novel as this  
was my first trip at Sea, we heavy  
winds the most of the way cross  
but had good luck all the way  
the Lord was with us all the time  
we landed in Liverpool the 5<sup>th</sup>  
of January 1853 all well save  
the few had not quite got rid  
of their Sea Sickness. The most  
of us stoped at Brother Cowley's  
the first night; all felt to thank  
our heavenly Father for his wat-  
-chful care over us while crossing  
the great deep and for all  
the blessings that we had enjoyed  
from our infantile moments  
on the 6<sup>th</sup> we walked through the  
Streets of Liverpool and I saw  
many a curiosity I will assure you  
for this was my first trip away.

loose and going from one side of  
the cabin to the other men and  
woman slipping down and going  
with the Boxes on all fours etc

This to me was quite novel as this  
was my first trip at Sea. We heavy  
winds the most of the way cross  
but had good luck all the way  
the Lord was with us all the time  
We landed in Liverpool the 5<sup>th</sup>  
of January 1853 all well save  
the few had not quite got rid  
of their Sea Sickness. The most  
of us stoped at Brother Cowley's  
the first night. All felt to thank  
our heavenly Father for his wat-  
-chful care over us while Crossing  
the great deep; and for all  
the blessings that we had enjoyed  
from our infantile moments  
On the 6<sup>th</sup> we walked through the  
Streets of Liverpool and I saw  
many a curiosity I will assure you  
for this was my first trip away

104  
 from home. In the evening we all met in a Room of Brother Cowlies and had a good time all arose and testified that God hade merciful to us from the time that we left the Valley till we hade Reached this place and we all blessed each other in the name of the Lord.

Stayed at Mrs Powleys Tavern over night on the 7<sup>th</sup> all passed off well in the Evening went to see Brother Samuel Richards to hear what he hade for us to do as he was at that time the presiding Elder the British Mishion he gave us some good Council and gave us our apointments, and it fell to my lot to go to Scotland in company with Brother's Mallen Atwood Edward Marten and Samuel Glasgow to labour under the Pastorial charge of Robert Cambell as he presided over all the affairs of the Church in Scotland.

from home. In the evening we all met in a Room of Brother Cowlies and hade a good time all arose and testified that God hade merciful to us from the time that we left the Valley till we hade Reached this place and we all blessed each other in the name of the Lord.

Stayed at Mrs. Powleys Tavern over night on the 7th all passed off well in the Evening and went to see Brother Samuel Richards to hear whet he hade for us to do as he was at that time the presiding Elder the British Mishion he gave us some good Council and gave us our apointments, and it fell to my lot to go to Scotland in Company with Brother's Mallen Atwood, Edward Marten and Samuel Glasgow to labour under the Pastorial charge of Robert Cambell as he presided over all the affairs of the Church in Scotland

At that time. Stayed this night <sup>105</sup>  
at Mrs Powleys Tavern. the 8<sup>th</sup>  
several of the Elders started for their  
fields of labour, In the evening at  
twenty minets to ~~seven~~ I and my  
Brethern who were to go to Scotland  
jumped aboard the Rail Cars and  
left Liverpool for Scotland and  
landed in Glasgow ~~twenty~~ <sup>minets</sup> to eight  
in the morning, went to Pastor Cambells  
found him all right Got us some  
Refreshments and it being Sunday  
we went with him to the Meeting  
and were all glad to see us and bid  
us welcome to Scotland and we  
had a good time, here I spoke  
the second time in publick but  
I lived through it as at first  
I and Brother Atwood went home  
with Widow Stuart and staid over  
night, next morning at Brother An-  
-derson, went from there to Pastor  
Cambells had a good time with  
him he told us that all was well

at that time. Stayed this night  
at Mrs Powleys Tavern. the 8th  
several of the Elders Started for their  
fields of labour. In the evening at  
twenty minets to seven I and my  
Brethern who were to go to Scotland  
jumped aboard the Rail cars and  
left Liverpool for Scotland and  
landed in Glasgow twenty minits to eight  
in the morning. Went to Pastor Cambells  
found him all right got us some  
Refreshments and it being Sunday  
we went with him to the Meeting  
and were all glad to see us and bid  
us welcome to Scotland and we  
had a good time, here I spoke  
the Second time in publick but  
I lived though it as at first  
I and Brother Atwood went home  
with Widow Stuart and staid over  
night, next morning at Brother An-  
-derson, went from there to Pastor  
Cambells had a good time with  
him he told us that all was well

in Scotland, stayed over night with him and in the morning before we had arose he came to our room and cauld Brother Glasgow to go with him to visit a Family or two who were Saints and lived sixteen miles from Glasgow. Maid his visit done his business with them and was back by ten O'clock morning. Spent the rest of the day in Singing and praying &c

In the Evening, Brother Glasgow and Atwood went to see a Family of Saints and to take Supper with them. And I and the Pastor went out of the City ten miles to see a Family in relation to their Emigration done all things up and was back to Glasgow by ten O'clock

Spent the rest of the evening with the Bretherin in Singing and praying and then went to Bed and slep firstrate. Wednesday the 12<sup>th</sup> Spent in the City walking

in Scotland, Stayed over night with him and in the Morning before we had arose he came to our room and Cauld Brother Glasgow to go with him to visit a Family or two who were Saints and lives Sixteen miles from Glasgow. Maid his visit done his business with them and was back by ten O'clock morning. Spent the rest of the day in Singing and praying &c In the evening Brother Glasgow and Atwood went to see a Family of Saints and to take Supper with them and I and the Pastor went out of the City ten miles to see a Family in relation to their Emigration done all things up and was back to Glasgow by ten O'clock Spent the rest of the evening with the Bretherin in Singing and praying and then went to Bed and slep firstrate. Wednesday the 12<sup>th</sup> Spent in the City walking

through the Streets looking at every  
Curiosity that came in our course and  
they were not few, and in the eav-  
-ning jumped aboard the Cars and went  
to Hallatown distance fortene Miles in  
20 minits found the Saints of that place  
all collected to gether to spend the eav-  
-ning in having a Soiree we enjoyed  
ourselves firstrate, they spoke peases  
and sung Songs &c. Stayed over night  
at Brother Gourley's thursday the 13<sup>th</sup> spent  
our time in visiting the Saints from house  
to house. at this visit I was I was  
introduced to the Scotch Customes of  
Dineing at first it was a novel to me  
but I soon got brock in so that  
I Could Drink out of the Same Cup  
with three or four others and  
with a Horn Spoon Could sup  
Call soap out of the Same Dish  
with three or four others and  
peal my Potatoes with my Fin-  
-gers and dip them in to a bunch  
of Salt that was piled up before

Though the Streets looking at evry  
couriosity that came in our course and  
they were not few. and in the eavn-  
-ning jumped aboard the Cars and went  
to Hallatown distance fortene Miles in  
20 minits found the Saints of that place  
all collected to gether to spend the eav-  
-ning in having a Soiree we enjoyed  
ourselves firstrate, they Spoke peaces  
and sung Songs etc Stayed overnight  
at Brother Gourley's thursday the 13<sup>th</sup> Spent  
our time in visiting with the Saints from house  
to house. at this visit I was I was  
introduced to the Scotch Customes of  
Dineing at first it was a novel to me  
but I soon got brock in so that  
I Could Drink out of the Same Cup  
with three or four others and  
with a Horn Spoon Could sup  
Cale Soop out of the Same Dish  
with three or four others and  
peal my Potatoes with my Fin-  
-gers and dip them in to a bunch  
of Salt that was piled up before

me on the Table, and then eat them as fast as the next Scotchman also take the meet from the plate with my Fingers and Convey it to my Mouth without a Knife or fork or plait to prepare it for that place as nimble as the best of them.

In the evening we went to the Iron Furnace and it was a splended Sight to see them drawing out all sizes of Barr Iron and from there went to Ardria and had a meeting with the few Saints that lived in that place had a good time, Staid one night with Brother Baxter Friday the 14<sup>th</sup> about noon left for Glasgow took Dinner with Bro Cambell at Bro Andersons, and in the evening went to a Prayer meeting had a good time &c. and soon. Spent 15<sup>th</sup> in walking through the Streets of Glasgow 16<sup>th</sup> went to Meeting it being Sunday had a firstrate time

me on the Table and then eat them as fast as the next Scotchman Also take the meet from the plate with my Fingers and Convey it to my Mouth without a knife fork or plait to prepare it for that place as nimble as the best of them. In the evening we went to the Iron Furnace and it was a splended Sight to see them drawing out all sizes of Barr Iron and from there went to Ardria and had a meeting with the few Saints that lived in that place had a good time, Staid over night with brother Baxter Friday the 14<sup>th</sup> about noon left for Glasgow took Dinner with Bro Cambell at Bro Andersons, and in the evening went to a Prayer meeting had a good time etc and so on. Spent 15<sup>th</sup> in walking through the Streets of Glasgow 16<sup>th</sup> went to meeting it being Sunday had a firstrate time

Continued in Glasgow till the 18<sup>th</sup> at 2<sup>109</sup>  
o'clock and left for Falkirk on board  
the Rail Cars stayed there a short  
time and then left for Boness  
distance 8 miles Caused the Saints  
together in the Evening, had a good  
time. (Brother Atwood and myself  
were together at this time) Staid over  
night. 19<sup>th</sup> walked to Bathgate distance  
10 Miles Caused the Saints and people  
to gether in the Evening, preached to  
them had a good time Staid over  
night 20<sup>th</sup> walked to Crofthead  
distance 8 Miles Caused the Saints to  
gether in the Evening, preached to  
them had a firstrate time Staid  
over night 21<sup>st</sup> walked to Bathgate  
jumped a board the Cars and went  
to the City of Edinburg Distance  
18 Miles from Bathgate arrived  
at four O'clock P.M. Staid over  
night 22<sup>nd</sup> walked through the  
City it is a Splended City and  
is the Matropolis of Scotland

109

Continued in Glasgow till the 18th at 2  
O'clock and left for Falkirk on board  
the Rail Cars Stayed there a short  
time and then left for Boness  
distance 8 miles Caused the Saints  
together in the Evening had a good  
time. (Brother Atwood and myself  
were together at this time) Staid over  
night 19th walked to Bathgate distance  
10 miles Caused the Saints and people  
to gether in the Evening preached to  
them had a good time Staid over  
night 20th walked to Crofthead  
distance 8 miles Caused the Saints to-  
gether in the Evening preached to  
them had a firstrate time Staid  
over night 21st walked to Bathgate  
jumped a board the Cars and went  
to the City of Edinburgh Distance  
18 miles from Bathgate arrived  
at four O'clock P. M. Staid over  
night 22nd walked through the  
City it is a Splended City and  
is the Matropolis of Scotland

121

110  
 or the Capital of Scotland Erristo-  
 ecorcy reigns predominant, but it  
 was a truth for us for it is a beau-  
 tiful City without doubt Staid over  
 night again at Brother Waugh's  
 23<sup>rd</sup> being Sunday we went to the  
 Saints Meeting, they had a fine  
 Meeting House and the were glad  
 to see us Brother Atwood and my-  
 self preached to them and we felt  
 first-rate had a good time thro-  
 gh the day meet again in the  
 Evening enjoyed our Selves first-  
 rate after meeting Brothers Atwood  
 Lynch and Myself went home with  
 Sister Hardy Staid all night  
 24<sup>th</sup> we all went to see the Castle  
 Saw the Crown that the Kings of  
 Scotland used to wear or that was  
 put upon their heads when they  
 first were Crowned also their  
 Sword and Scepter was with it  
 we went into the Room where  
 Queen Mary of Scotland lived

or the Capital of Scotland Erristo-  
 ecorcy reigns predominant, but it  
 was a truth for us for it is a beau-  
 tiful City without doubt Staid over  
 night again at Brother Waugh's  
 23<sup>rd</sup> being Sunday we went to the  
 Saints meeting they had a fine  
 meeting House and the were glad  
 to see us Brother Atwood and my-  
 self preached to them and we felt  
 first-rate had a good time thro-  
 gh the day meet again in the  
 Evening enjoyed our Selves first-  
 rate after meeting Brothers Atwood,  
 Lynch and Myself went home with  
 Sister Hardy Staid all night  
 24<sup>th</sup> we all went to see the Castle  
 Saw the Crown that the Kings of  
 Scotland used to wear or that was  
 put upon their heads when they  
 first were Crowned also their  
 Sword and Scepter was with it  
 we went into the Room where  
 Queen Mary of Scotland lived



when King James was Born and  
Saw the window that he was let  
down from when a young Child  
in order to save his life from being  
taken by his Enamies, We also  
Sat in the Chair that She sat in  
when the Child was Born it was  
some three hundred years ago that  
this Chair was used by her Saw  
the Bed that She Slept in the first  
night after her Marriage Saw the  
kneedle work that She done with her  
own hands Saw the work Stand  
that used Saw the Chairs that She  
and Husband Sat in they were  
Married saw her Candelstick it is  
a curious thing Saw the Boots that  
her Husband had on his feet when  
he was Murdered Saw the place  
where he was Murdered the Stain  
of his Blood is yet to be seen  
on the floor and Saw their  
Likenesses all the above is  
Said to be the real thing and

when King James was Born and  
Saw the window that he was let  
down from when a young Child  
in order to Save his life from being  
taken by his Enamies, We also  
Sat in the Chair that She Sat in  
when the Child was Born it was  
Some three hundred years ago that  
this Chair was used by her saw  
the Bed that She slept in the first  
night after her Marriage Saw the  
Kneedle work that She done with her  
own hands Saw the Chairs that She  
and Husband Sat in they were  
married Saw her Candle stick it is  
a curious thing Saw the Boots that  
her Husband had on his feet when  
he was Murdered Saw the place  
where he was murdered the Stain  
of his Blood is yet to be Seen  
on the floor and saw their  
Likenesses all the above is  
Said to be the real thing and

perhaps it is, be that as it may it makes quite a show. We left Edinburgh for the Dundee Conference the 26 and stoped in several little Branches of the Church by the way and preached to the Saints, and the 29<sup>th</sup> landed safe in the City of Dundee found the in that City feeling well. The population of Dundee is 73 thousand, it is a Manufacturing town, they principally work Flax and Hemp. the 30<sup>th</sup> being Sunday we met with the Saints at their place of worship. Monday Morning 31<sup>st</sup> left Dundee for Blairgowrie could what few Saints there were together and preached to them they felt well. Tuesday the first day of February 1853 we left Blairgowrie and went to the City of Perth could the Saints to gether and preached to them done them all good we could they felt well, Staid over night at Brother Scrowthers Wednesday 2<sup>nd</sup> left Perth for the City of Dundee found the all in good spirits

perhaps it is, be that as it may it makes quite a Show We left Edinburgh for the Dundee Conference the 26 and Stoped in several little Branches of the Church by the way and preached to the Saints and the 29th landed Safe in the city of Dundee found the in that City feeling well. The population of Dundee is 73 thousand, it is a manufacturing town, they principlly work Flax and Hemp. the 30th being Sunday we met with the Saints at their place of Worship. Monday Morning 31st left Dundee for Blairgowrie Could what few Saints there were together and preached to them they felt well. Tuesday the first day of February 1853 we left Blairgowrie and went to the city of Perth could the Saints to gether and preached to them done them all goode we could they felt well, Staid over night at Brother Scrowthers Wednesday 2nd left Perth for the City of Dundee found the all in god Spirits

113  
Staid over night at Brother Copleys on the 3<sup>rd</sup>  
we left Dundee and went to the town of  
Arbroath found quite a Branch there of  
Saints Preached to them all felt well. the  
4<sup>th</sup> we went from this place Montrose and  
found three Saints there Staid over night  
with them comforted their hearts, the 5<sup>th</sup> we  
left that City and went to the City of  
Aberdeen. Brother Atwood left me at Arbr-  
-oath and returned to the City of Perth to  
his field of labour assigned him by the Pastor  
Aberdeen and vicinity was sought off to me  
for my field labour by Pastor Campbell  
I staid in this City and vicinity for nine  
months and done the very best I new how  
to preach the gosple this place was my  
first field of labour that I ever hade.  
sought off to me. here is where I comm-  
-ced in the ministry as you may say for  
although I hade spoke to the Saints a  
few times while on my way here. I hade  
not could out Strangers to hear the  
Gosple of jesus Christ taught them  
in its fullness but here I did

125  
Staid over night at Brother Copleys on the 3<sup>rd</sup>  
we left Dundee and went to the town of  
Arbroath found quite a Branch there of  
Saints Preached to them all felt well. The  
4th we went from this place Montrose and  
found three Saints there Staid over night  
with them comforted their hearts, the 5th  
left that City and went to the City of  
Aberdeen, Brother Atwood left me at Arbr-  
-oath and returned to the city of Perth to  
his field of labour assigned him by the Pastor  
Aberdeen and vicinity was sought off to me  
for my field labour by Pastor Campbell  
I staid in this City and vicinity for nine  
months and done the very best I new how  
to preach the gosple this place was my  
first field of labour that I ever hade  
sought off to me. here is where I Comm-  
-ced in the ministry as you may say for  
although I hade spoke to the Saints a  
few times while on my way here. I hade  
not could out Strangers to hear the  
Gospel of Jesus Christ taught them  
in its fullness but here I did

and I can truly say that it was quite a task for me to do for I did not know one single verce of the Scripture by heart never-the-less I went to work in the fear of my God and done the best I could to get the people to see the truth as it was in relation to the ordinances of the Gospel namely Faith Repentance Baptism for the Remission of sins and the laying on of the Hands of the servants of God for the Reception of the who-ly Ghost that they might be led into all truth and God was with me in my Ignorance and caused me to throw out some Ideas that fed the people but I found that the people were so traditionated that they wanted me to prove the things that I asserted to be true by the old and new Testament so I got a New Bible and went to work and Studed it night and day so that I might be <sup>able</sup> to give them proof and the Lord was with me and I so in a little while that I could

and I can truly say that it was quite a task for me to do for I did not know one single verce of the Scripture by heart never-the-less I went to work in the fear of my God and done the best I could to get the people to see the truth as it was in relation to the ordinances of the Gospel namely Faith Repentance Baptism for the Remission of Sins and the laying on of the Hands of the servants of God for the Reception of the who-ly Ghost that they might be led into all truth and God was with me in my Ignorance and caused me to throw out some idears that fed the people but I found that the people were so traditionaled they wanted me to proove the things that I asserted to be true by the old and new Testament so I got a New Bible and went to work and Studeded it night and day so that I might be able to give them proof and the Lord was with me and I so in a little while that I could

1/5  
give them more proof than some of them  
wanted to her and can safely say that  
I never felt better in my life than when  
preaching the Gospel of Christ it feeds  
a man both night and day and yet  
he has appetite. I continued as I said  
in this northern part of Scotland and  
traveled and Preached and done the best  
I could for nine Months Baptised nine  
Individuals and the chance looked good  
for more to come forward to the waters  
of Baptism. December the 12<sup>th</sup> 1853  
I received a Letter from President S. W.  
Richard and D. Spencer notifying me  
to take the Presidency of the Dundee  
Conference. and if ever I felt my little-  
ness it was at this time but I went  
forward and done the best I could and  
the Lord was still with me when I took  
the Conference it was considerably in Dept  
Say 50 odd Pounds Sterling or two  
hundred and fifty Dollars and  
there was but two hundred and  
fifty Saints old and young or there-  
abouts

give them more proof than some of them  
wanted to her and can safely say that  
I never felt better in my life than when  
preaching the Gospel of Christ it feeds  
a man both night and day and yet  
he has appetite. I continued as I said  
in this northern part of Scotland and  
traveled and Preached and done the best  
I could for nine Months Baptised nine  
Individuals and the chance looked good  
for more to come forward to the waters  
of Baptism. December the 12<sup>th</sup> 1853  
I received a Letter from President S. W.  
Richard and D. Spencer notifying me  
to take the Presidency of the Dundee  
Conference and if ever I felt my little-  
ness it was at this time but I went  
forward and done the best I could and  
the Lord was still with me when I took  
the Conference it was considerably in Dept  
Say 50 odd Pounds Sterling or two  
hundred and fifty Dollars and  
there was but two hundred and  
fifty Saints old and young or there-abouts

116  
 It was the first day of January 1854  
 that I took charge of the Dundee  
 Conference, and continued as President  
 of that Conference till the Spring of  
 1856 during this time I done the  
 best I knew how for the good of the  
 Saints, the Lord was with me all  
 the time I used all the knowledge that God  
 gave me to get all the Saints away from  
 that Conference to the vallies of the  
 Mountains that could passably get  
 means to go, and some that could not  
 get means. And when I left that  
 Conference in March 1856 I left it  
 clear of all Indebtedness not owing  
 one Shilling to <sup>my</sup> knowledge.  
 When I left the Dundee Conference I  
 went to ~~Edingburgh~~ Edingburgh Conference  
 and in company with Bro. Wm Eaton  
 we took charge of a few Saints who had  
 started for the vally of the Great  
 Salt Lake in north America  
 we got all things ready, and then  
 got aboard aboard the Rale's Cars

It was the first day of January 1854  
 that I took charge of the Dundee  
 Conference and continued as President  
 of that Conference till the Spring of  
 1856 during this time I done the  
 Best I knew how for the good of the  
 Saints. the Lord was with me all the  
 time I used all the knowledge that God  
 gave me to get all the Saints away from  
 that Conference to the Vallies of the  
 Mountains that could possibly get  
 means to go, and some that could not  
 get means. and when I left that  
 conference in March 1856 I left it  
 clear of all Indebtedness not owing  
 one Shilling to my knowledge.  
 When I left the Dundee Conference I  
 went to the Edingburgh Conference  
 and in company with Bro. Wm Eaton  
 we took charge of a few Saints who had  
 started for the Velley of the Great  
 Salt Lake in North America  
 we got all things ready and then  
 got aboard aboard the Rale Cars

and went to the City of Glasgow. and  
there the Saints Collected from all parts  
of Scotland till there was about three  
Hundred gathered for the purpose of  
going to Utah.

117

and went to the City of Glasgow and  
there the Saints Collected from all parts  
of Scotland till there was about three  
Hundred Gethered for the purpose of  
going to Utah.

129





**CAPT'N DAN'S  
HANDCARTS TO UTAH**





DANIEL D. McARTHUR MEMORIAL FLOAT

Sponsored by Leon and Annie M. Jennings

Dixie Roundup Parade September 1961

Pushing Handcart, Mary Ann and Elma Ann McArthur  
Pulling Handcart, Andrew O. and Richard C. McArthur  
Facing Handcart, Wilford W. and Moroni McArthur



The autobiography of Daniel D. McArthur ended with the gathering of converts preparing to emigrate to the Valley of the Great Salt Lake City.

By March 23, 1856, 534 saints had made adequate preparations and sailed for America on the ship Enoc Train, Henry P. Rich, Captain. Captain Rich checked his manifest and passenger list and wondered what circumstances had brought about this combination of goods and passengers. He was concerned about how to handle such a combination.

His fears were soon put to rest. The passengers were organized into five wards with appropriate presiding officers. By the sound of a bugle various wards were called to meetings. Prayers were held mornings and evenings at regular intervals. Meals were served on strict schedule. Quarters were kept neat and clean, all attended to the needs of each other. Missionaries realized their responsibility to the Saints. Saints recognized their obligation to carry out instructions given and all felt the Power of God in their endeavor. Captain Rich soon learned a great respect for his passengers and their Testimony of the truthfulness of the Gospel which influenced them on this journey.

The voyage was a pleasing experience. Good weather, no major problems, a first rate time was enjoyed by all.

Upon reaching Boston April 30th, the Saints expressed appreciation to Captain Rich for his kindness and consideration during the voyage. Captain Rich expressed his appreciation to the Saints for the clean, orderly manner in which they conducted themselves and the special attention they showed in tending to the health and well being of all on board the Enoc Train.

The Saints passed inspection at Boston May 1st and entrained to N. Y. City and westward to Iowa City, Iowa, where they arrived May 12th.

Much work needed to be done to prepare handcarts, secure transportation for personal belongings and prepare the saints physically and emotionally for a long journey ahead. Each person was allowed seventeen pounds of baggage including clothing, bedding and utensils.

Company Clerk Wm. Wright tells the story. His account follows and graphically depicts the Handcart journey.

1856

Monday evening 19th May A meeting was called. Brother Spencer presiding, when the present Company P. E. passengers was divided into two Hand Cart Companies. Brother Edmund Ellsworth to be Captain over the one Company, and Brother John D. T. McAllister the other.

Tuesday 20th A meeting having been called this morning of the Bren. Brother Henry Bowering was unanimously selected Captain of Guard for this Company, and Brother William Wright was also unanimously Chosen Clerk. The Saints according to instruction, attended to the cleaning of the Camp Ground after which it looked sweet and Clean. All things in good order; provisions served out this evening Consisting of Flour, Tea, Sugar, and Dried fruit.

Wednesday 21st engaged all day weighing Luggage (17 lb per head) for the Hand Carts. In the evening president McAllister called a meeting of the Bren. for the purpose of instructing them into the nature of the Hand Cart Luggage regulation, he together with several of the Bren. took a lively part in addressing the meeting. a good and energetic spirit was infused into the saints and the blessing of God rested upon all present. On putting the question whether the Saints were agreeable to go with their 17 lb per Head all responded with a hearty Amen. Elder McAllister

promised should they do this and not murmur, the blessing of God would be upon them to impart strength to them, to enable them to perform the journey which they were about to undertake, and neither Indians nor Devils would be permitted to harm them. the meeting Closed with prayer all seperating under the sweet influence of the Holy spirit. The Saints were instructed those who were intending to Store by their goods here in Charge of Bro Spencer until sent for. also those who were Capable of sending them through this season by the teams and etc to make out an Inventory of said goods to be handed into the hand of the president so that all things be kept Correct. provisions served out Consisting of Flour and Tea.

Thursday 22nd Saints all well and a good spirit prevailing. engaged in taking the Inventory of goods in Camp. Flour, pork and salt delt out.

Friday 23rd Weight Luggage and made out invoices etc. Weather Hot, Saints all well with one or two exceptions. Flour delt out.

Saturday 24th Saints all up pretty early out of their beds. a beautiful morning the sun in all his splendour was sheding over the saints his refulgent rays tending to Cheer and enliven their hearts. P. M. attended to the weighing of Luggage and making all possible preparations for our journey or departure. Instructions were given to the Saints to have all rubbish Cleaned from off the Camp Ground. attended to and lookin firstrate and healthy.

Sunday 25th The Bren and Sisters all engaged in making preparations to go to meeting, all well. The Children having been washed and got on Clean Cloths looked neat, sweet, Healthy and Godlike. At 11 O'Clock our meeting assembled a goodly number being present, both of Saints and Strangers. Elder Godsale was introduced to speak, which was Complied with, a very good and appropriate dicourse was delivered upon the opening up of the last

dispensation and the Restoration of the ancient gospel. Meeting seperated to meet again at 1 O'Clock. Meeting again assembled according to adjourment. Elder Chauncy Webb was introduced who Spoke largly and eloquently upon the moral degradation of the Human Family and how to better their degraded Condition, he also presented them with the first principals of the Gospel. these subjects were treated upon very warmly. and caused feelings of Holy aspirations to burn in the breasts of all the Bren and Sisters present. A Meeting was Called in the evening for the purpose of reading the names of those who embarked from Liverpool in the Ship. [Enoc Train] President Spencer and several of the Bren spoke upon the Necessity of sacrificing our feelings in Relation to leaving our Luggage behind us and the propriety of starting for Zion with our 17 lb per Head. all was deeply influenced by the Holy Spirit the bren also expressed their satisfaction in seeing the saints so Compliable with these things and their intention to Carry them out. They separated being double buoyed up with a determination to prosecute their journey with Zeal and integrity, and thereby have an example for those Comming after us, well worthy of their emalation.

Monday 26th This morning being so rainey nothing of any importance could be attended to. In the evening a smart breeze set in attended with a good deal of Rain, Thunder, and Lightening, so much so that a Continued illumination was Kept up for the space of two hours. those unacquanted with this strange phenomanon were a little alarmed in Consequence thereof. but through the blessing of God no accidents happened. some one or two tents were blown down, but the Saints soon found shelter beneath other ones.

Tuesday 27th The Cloths and other materials which got wet the past night, were all put out to dry this morning. the Company are still in a healthy and prosperous looking Condition, one or exceptions. provisions served out Consisting of Flour, Pork, sugar and apples. In the evening

at 10 1/2 O'Clock June wife of John Frew was delivered of a fine son, named William McAllister Frew.

Wednesday 28th As usual Camp duties going on. Saints all generally well. attended to Collecting of Cash and making out Receipts for forwarding Luggage to the Valley. In the evening Bro McAllister Called a meeting for the purpose of instructing the Brethren not to be going away strolling through the surrounding vicinity when their services were Continually required in Camp.

Thursday 29th Saints all well, nothing of importance going on. Flour, sugar, Tea and Butter delt out.

Friday 30th Engaged in bringing up the Hand Carts from the City and etc assigned a goodly number of the Brethern and Sisters with families for the Carts, Saints tolerable well.

Saturday 31st A little breezy, but a good morning. At 4 O'Clock this morning Elizabeth wife of Ralph Ramsay was delivered of a daughter named Jane. In the evening a meeting was convened for the purpose of introducing the Saints into the principal of cleanliness and other matters connected with Camp duties, Bros. McAllister. Ellsworth and Ferguson spoke upon the necessity of the instructions being carried out. to keep the Camp ground Clean and in good order. all felt inclined to take hold of the instructions and Carry them out to the letter. Pork, Flour and apples served out.

#### JUNE 1856

Sunday June 1st 1856 Saints all up and getting washed and prepared for meeting. Elder Daniel Tyler was introduced to address the assembly he beautifully illustrated the principal of Gathering, Brother Webb then arose and delivered a very influential address upon mans

mental and physical abilities and how to apply the same to a good and proper use. P. M. Meeting assembled Bro. James Ferguson arose and delivered a fluent discourse upon the first principles of the Gospel and demonstrated them to a nicety in showing their harmony with scripture and reason at the same time showing the principals as taught by the world as being opposed to Scripture and common sense. The subject was properly and manfully handled, great attention was paid to the speaker, all felt highly satisfied and departed in peace. In the evening a meeting was Called at which Bro Daniel D McArthur was unanimously Chosen to preside over the Company in room of Bro John D T McAllister whose presence was Considered more serviceable here at the starting point in helping to facilitate the emigration Keeping the Store and etc.

Monday 2nd A fresh company of Emigrants arrived today. Composed principally of Welsh, one or two Scotch and one or two Irish and a number of English. provisions delt out consisting of Flour, Tea, Sugar and Coffie, Saints all well today whith some four esceptions who are in a bettering Condition.

Tuesday 3rd Usual routine of Camp duties going on. Potatoes served out a good spirit prevailing in Camp.

Saturday 7th At 8 O'Clock this morning Jane, Daughter of Ralph and Elisabeth Ramsay departed this life at the camp ground. Ioway City, Iowa Aged 7 days. buried in the evening at the same place. In the evening a number of Bren Sisters, who were Baptised some few days ago were Confirmed. Flour, Pork, Tea Sugar, and apples delt out.

Sunday 8th Held preaching at 10 O'Clock A. M. and at 3 O'Clock P. M. a goodly number of strangers attended. All came off Well. In the evening a number of the Bren met where the following resolutions were motioned and carried unanimously.

- 1st Motioned that the present company be separated into two Divisions of Hundreds to be called the first and second divisions.
- 2nd Motion that Brother Truman Leanord preside over the first division and brother Spencer W. Crandall the Second.
- 3rd Motioned that presidents be appointed over each respective tent, or twenty.
- 4th Motioned that Brother Walter Grainger, William Hillhouse, John Gray. John Frew, John Dreaney, Sam'l Hargraves, Robert Parker, William Heaton, John Bell, William Wright and John Sheers be appointed for this purpose.

Monday 9th Saints all generally well with few exceptions

Tuesday 10th Making fast preparations for to Start on our journey. Luggage all settled up. ready to Start.

Wednesday 11th About 11 O'Clock this morning the company rolled out from the Camp ground with 161 adults 61 children Total 222 Souls for Florence, also the following 12 oxen 2 waggons and the Hand Carts. The saints left the Camp ground full of Valour and Spirits. They were accompanied for about the distance of a mile with Brothers James Ferguson, and John D. T. McAllister, when they were about to return the Carts were all brought to a halt and Brother McAllister was introduced to sing the Hand Cart Song the Saints all joined merrily in the chorus. Brother James Ferguson then proposed three cheers to Brigham Young. F. D. Richards, D. Spencer, D. T. McAllister and D. D. McArthur, the saints in return gave three hearty cheers to Bro James Ferguson. Three cheers were then delivered and responded to from every heart in favor of our Hand Carts and a loud three cheers for ourselves. This was a time particularly long to be

remembered and will be recorded in the archives of the Church to be handed down to generations yet unborn. in a few moments every one was at their post and the Carts began to roll amid loud cheers and God Bless you. 6 O'Clock overtook Elder Ellsworth's company at the 9 mile house camped here. Traveled 8 miles this day. had provisions served out consisting of Flour, Pork Tea, Sugar and apples. One of the Carts broke down, axle broke.

Thursday 12th President McArthur called a meeting and gave the saints some good instructions relative to not flinching from their duties to God. Left at 9 1/2 O'Clock A. M. and Camped at 6 O'Clock P. M. Traveled 12 miles, road very sandy and heavy, Weather very Hot.

Friday 13th Left at 6 3/4 O'Clock A. M. and camped at 1 O'Clock P. M. traveled 7 miles. The following individuals returned to Iowa as the did not feel inclined to proceed any further. Thomas S. Lucas, Mary do Senior, Elisabeth do, Mary do junior, Martha do, Patrick Bermingham, Mary Catherine Bermingham, Edward John Bermingham and Jane Elisabeth Bermingham. Flour, Indian Meal, Pork, Sugar and yeast Powder delt out, all well and a good spirit prevailing universally. A meeting was called where Brothers McArthur, Lennord and Crandall instructed the Saints to be carefull of those Gentile Spirits that are going about seeking to draw away the females especially from prosecuting their journey with their sympathetic delusive spirits but to have a strong resolution and determination to rebuke such. Council was also given to seek to study the interest of our Hand Carts. to avoid all dangers that could possible be aboided also to seek to cultivate the spirit of Union which would make a Heaven to us under all circumstances and if we would not do this we could make a Hell right in our midst. Meeting separated under the genial influence of the holy spirit . Bros Walter Granger and William Heaton were appointed Commissaries for the provisions.



Saturday 14th Left at 7 O'Clock and camped at 11 O'Clock A. M. for the purpose of giving the sisters an opportunity of washing their clothes and etc. traveled this day 7 miles. In the evening Bro. James Ferguson arrived from Iowa with the brethren and Sisters who returned on the 13th of this month. Provisions served consisting of Flour, Sugar, Tea, Apples and Baking Soda.

Sunday 15th We were favored this day with an excellent discourse from Elders France and Frost upon the fundamental principals of the gospel. Quite an excitement was made amongst the strangers who constituted a good portion of the meeting. They came forward and expressed their wishes to purchase some of our Books so that they might learn more fully of our principals. In the evening the saints again congregated for the purpose of partaking the sacrament in Commemoration of the death and sufferings of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. This was quite a time of refreshing from the Lord in as much as they had not an opportunity of doing this Holy act for a good length of time previous. There was a calm silence experienced during the whole time and the Spirit of God illuminated the countenances of each one present. We were favored likewise with a few very appropriate remarks upon the nature of the Hand Cart Expedition that in as much as they would honour the Lord and his servants in accomplishing this glorious object it would be held in honorable remembrance and etc and handed down to the later posterity of Israel. these remarks were made by Elder Ferguson. Three members were Confirmed and the meeting closed. who were as follows James Gardiner, Walter Gardiner, and Janet Clotworthy.

Monday 16th Left at 8 O'Clock A. M. camped at 6 3/4 O'Clock stopped to serve out provisions cooking and etc. 1 1/2 hours Traveled 15 miles. Saints all in good spirits. The name of the camping ground is Big Bur Creek.

Tuesday 17th Left Big Bur Creek 7 1/2 O'Clock A. M. and camped at 3 O'Clock P. M. stopped during the journey 1 3/4 hour Traveled 15 miles. Saints all well but a few fatigued with the hot weather. Camped this day at Apple Grove.

Wednesday 18th Left at 6 O'Clock A. M. and camped at 10 O'Clock A.M. Traveled 10 miles provisions served out consisting of Flour, Indian Meal and Soap. In the evening a meeting was held principally of the brethren where some good instructions were delivered upon the nature of our journey also upon the propriety of having ourselves up to be real practical Economists. There was a good spirit prevailing and a strong determination and resolution fixed to pursue onto their journey with more vigor and strength.

Thursday 19th Left at 7 O'Clock A. M. and camped at Elk Creek at 2 O'Clock P. M. Stopped during the journey 1 1/2 hours for Breakfast Traveled this day 12 miles. Flour, Indian Meal, Sugar, Tea and Apples delt out to the Saints.

Friday 20th Left Elk Creek at 7 O'Clock and camped at Indian Creek at 4 1/2 O'Clock P. M. Stopped for resting and etc 2 1/2 hours Traveled this day 14 miles. Saints considerable tired and fatigued with soar feet, day very hot with a gentle breeze. One of the covered carts broke down. Axle broke put in a new one.

Saturday 21st Left Indian Creek at 7 O'Clock A. M. traveled 14 miles and camped at the south Skunk Creek at 3 3/4 O'Clock P. M. Stopped for various purposes 2 1/2 hours. Two open carts broke down (axels broke) provisions delt out consisting of Flour, Indian Meal, Sugar, Tea, Rice and Salt.

Sunday 22nd P. M. A meeting was called and was favored with a very excellent discourse from Elder William Heaton upon the principal of immediate revelation. Elders McArthur and Ellsworth arose alternately and gave the

Saints instructions relative to the health and prosperity of the camp. also upon the principal of Union, for by it the nations would yet be made to quake and fear. Also to guard against such characters as were going about using their sympathy and philanthropy as a means through which to turn away the Saints from prosecuting their journey and to regard it as you would do the cracking of sticks beneath a dinner pot knowing it was from the devil, the good spirit was realised by all present.

Monday 23rd left South Skunk Creek at 7 1/4 O'Clock A. M. Past through a small place named the "Rising Sun" and Camped the four Mile Creek at 12 O'Clock A. M. Traveled 10 miles. Flour, Sugar and apples served out.

Tuesday 24th left the four Mile Creek at 7 1/2 O'Clock A. M. traveled 13 miles past through Fort Demoine a goodmany persons manifested a very evil spirit towards us by hooting us and shouting silly Mormons, duped and etc. Camped at 4 O'Clock P. M. Stopped during the journey 2 3/4 hours this camping place had no particular name. Flour, Yeast Powder and Salt served out. Saints all well with a few exceptions through fatigue and etc.

Wednesday 25th Left at 7 1/4 O'Clock A. M. traveled 19 miles Camped on the banks of the North Coon River at 4 1/2 O'Clock Stopped during journey 2 hours. Weather considerable cool and Mild. In the evening Capt'n McArthur called a meeting for the purpose of giving the saints an opportunity of expressing their sentiments relative to how they felt since they started from Iowa. A good number of the brethern embraced the chance and spoke favorably of the blessings of the Lord which had attended them on their journey and felt highly satisfied with their leader whom the Lord had placed there for their directions and was perfectly satisfied that better leaders could not be given them then Bro McArthur as Capt'n and his Councilers Bro's Lennord and Crandell all felt well with this evenings procedour,

Thursday 26th Left the North Coon River at 7 1/4 O'Clock A. M. Traveled 12 miles. had to ford the above mentioned river after starting Camped on the bank of the Middle Coon River at 2 1/2 O'Clock P. M. The saints had to ford this River which was a Considerable depth but got over all right. Flour, Soap, Yeast Powder and Apples delt out.

Friday 27th left the Middle Coon River at 7 1/2 O'Clock A. M. Traveled 9 miles. Camped on the banks of the South Coon River at 12 1/4 O'Clock P. M. A very pleasant day with a nice breeze. At 6 1/4 O'Clock John Smith son of Ralph and Jane Ramsay died of diarrhaea. Aged 19 months and 11 days.

Saturday 28th Left the South Coon River at 6 1/2 O'Clock A. M. Traveled 16 miles Camped at Middle River 3 1/2 O'Clock P. M. stopped during journey for various purposes 2 1/2 hours. The burial of the child that died last evening was attended to on starting this morning at Middle River. road good, weather mild and pleasant, provisions delt out consisting of Flour, Apples, Sugar, Tea and Yeast Powder. In the evening a heavy gale of wind blew, attended with a very heavy rain.

Sunday 29th Elder Sam'l Hargraves preached a discourse upon the Worlds Apostacy, or departure from the true order of the ancient Gospel. Also beautifule illustrated the principle by which they could be restored. A good many strangers were present and paid good attention. The meeting was brought to a close by singing and prayer. The saints were requested to remain on the ground to have instructions given. Bro Spencer W. Crandall was appointed to address the Meeting which he did in a very able and manly manner. Elders Ellsworth, McArthur and Leonard took an active part in exhorting the Saints to Faithfulness. Also on the principles of Order, Union and of wives being

subject to their Husbands in the Lord. A first rate time was enjoyed by all present. Their joyfull countenance indicated a merry heart.

Monday 30th Left the Middle River at 6 3/4 O' C A. M. traveled 16 1/2 miles and camped at Turkey Grove at 3 O' C P. M. Stopped during journey 2 hours. Weather cool and road pretty hilly but clean. Flour, Soap and Salt delt out. Saints all well without any exceptions a good spirits prevailing

#### JULY 1856

Tuesday 1st July Left Turkey Grove at 7 3/4 O' C A. M. traveled 14 miles and camped at the head of Turkey Creek at 2 3/4 O' C P. M. stopped during journey 1 1/2 hours one open Cart broke this day (axle broke) road in good order for traveling in consequence of some rain being the last evening which lay the dust to a good extent. Saints all well, but a few fatigued. Weather a little hot attended with a refreshing breeze. Flour, Indian Meal, Pork and Yeast Powder delt out. About 12 O' C A. M. Arthur son of Robert Parker Strayed away from the Company and could not be found. This day we were visited in the evening with a very heavy storm Lightening and Thunder, one tent blown down.

Wednesday 2nd Brothers McArthur and Lennord started out this morning in persuit of the boy and searched all the country over. They had to return without finding any trace of him. In consequence of the boy being lost and the late rain which drenched all the clothes and required them to be dried the company did not start this day.

Thursday 3rd Left the head of Turkey Creek at 6 1/2 O' C A. M. passed through "Indian Town" at 9 1/2 O' C and camped at Prarrie Creek at 7 O' C traveled 24 miles. Stopped during journey 4 hours. Bro Robert Parker did not start with the company this morning, remained behind to endeavour to find his son, either living or dead.

Friday 4th Left Prarrie Creek at 7 3/4 O' C A. M. traveled 20 miles and Camped at Silver Creek at 6 3/4 O' C P. M. Stopped for various purposes 3 3/4 hours.

Saturday 5th Remained at Silver Creek all day so that the Saints might get rested and the little bits of articles attended to. At 8 1/2 O' C A. M. Bro. Robert Parker arrived in Camp with his son there was a joy manifested from every soul in Camp. It was found the boy had in coming along the road with the Company lingered about half a mile behind. between the carts and waggons and had fallen asleep among the long grass before the waggons had been up in time to have him picked up. On wakening some glimmer of light had attracted his attention (the light which he saw was in the woods) believing it to be the camp he made his way for it as quick as possible but finding it was not he lay himself down and slept till morning. when he gathered himself up as well as he could and repaired to a Dutchmans house and reported himself where his Father had the pleasure of finding him.

Sunday 6th Weather very hot with al little breeze. In the evening a meeting was called at which some general instructions were given to the saints in relation to their duties as siants. Not for to quarrel and contend among themselves but to be united as one man for the time would come when this would be required from every individual in this company and that with unflinching integrity. All realized a good time.

Monday 7th Left Silver Creek at 7 3/4 O' C A.M. Traveled 20 Mile and camped at Messquito Creek at 6 O' C P.M. Stopped during journey 3 1/2 hours. Weather very hot. Road extremely hilly and bad. Saints all well but a little fatagued.

Tuesday 8th Left Musguitoo Creek at 6 3/4 O' C A.M. and arrived at the Missouri River at 4 1/2 O' C P.M. Crossed the Ferry and Camped at 6 1/2 Traveled 16 miles. Stopped

during journey 2 3/4 hours. Weather Hot and Road very hilly. The country which we passed along this day presented one continual range of sceneries.

Monday 14th at 10 O'C P. M. Elizabeth wife of Peter Richardson was delivered of a Daughter it lived 2 1/2 hours and died at 12 1/2 O'C the mother is recovering fast.

Tuesday 15th Elizabeth the daughter of Henry and Margaret Elikor departed this life at 1 O'C P. M. amid a wide circle of relations and acquaintences who sorrowfully laments her absence. May her ashes rest in peace till the morning of the Resurrection for she gained while in this life a most prominent part in the estimation of the saints.

Saturday 19th This morning quite an alarm was created with the cry of somebody had fallen into the river on dicoverly it was found to be Bro. Bedson Eardly who had been shooting birds and some how or other had been persuing the bird when wandered near the bank of the river and tumbled in. The brethern was soon at hand with rope and saved him (in all propability) from a watery grave. This day a company of hand cart emigrants under the direction Cap'n Bunker arrived from Iowa, visited last night with a very heavy thunder and lightening. All well.

Left Florence for Great Salt Lake City July 24th 1856 on Thursday 10 1/2 O'C all well with 3 exceptions with 13 yoke of oxen 4 waggons 16 cows and 47 Hand Carts. The following individuals remained behind at Florence as they did not feel disposed to presecute their journey any further. Thomas Lucas, Mary Lucas sen, Mary Lucas Junr. Eliza Lucas, Martha Lucas, Rebecca Sanderson, Sarah Ann Sanderson, Roada Sanderson, Peter Richardson, Eliza Richardson and Agnes Stewart, Bro James Rice and his Family, Eliza Reid sen, Eliza Reid junr, James Reid, Mary Reid and John Reid were prevented from starting with the company in consequence of him having received a shot in

the leg from some scoundrel on Wednesday evening. What raised them to committ this barbarious and criminal act could not be correctly asserted. Stopped about 3 3/4 hours to have dinner then started and camped at Little Pap Creek at 5 1/2 P. M. Traveled 7 miles.

Friday 25th Left Little Pap Creek at 8 1/4 O'C A. M. traveled 16 miles and camped at Elk Horn River at 5 1/2 O'C P. M. stopped during journey for resting 2 1/2 hours. Bro McArthurs Mule broke loose this morning and ran off 7 miles to the other side of Florence, when he got it. Camp in good spirits.

Saturday 26th Left the Elk Horn River at 7 1/2 O'C A. M. detained 2 hours in crossing the ferry and camped at the Platte River at 5 1/2 O'C P. M. traveled 15 miles stopped on the way 1 1/2 hours. Weather good. all well.

Sunday 27th Remained in camp all day. In the evening a meeting was held and good instructions given.

Monday 28th Left the North Corner of the Platte river at 6 3/4 O'C A. M. traveled 17 miles and camped at 6 O'C P.M. Stopped during journey 2 1/4 hours.

Tuesday 29th Rolled out at 8 1/2 O'C A. M. arrived at the Loup Fork at 20 minutes from 3 P. M. detained 4 hours in crossing it and Camped on the other side. an emmense cloud of grasshoppers was seen here today. The people were quite alarmed in Consequence thereof. It being rare for such to be seen in this part. Camped 20 minutes from 7 O'C P. M. traveled 9 miles. Weather hot Saints all well things all going on first rate.

Wednesday 30th Rolled off at 8 O.C. A. M. arrived at the Loup Fork at 20 minutes from 3 P.M. detained 4 hours in crosing it and camped on the other side. an immense cloud of grasshoppers was seen here today. The people were quite alarmed in Consequence thereof. It being rare for such to

be seen in this part. Camped 20 minutes from 7 O'C P.M. traveled 9 miles. Weather hot Saints all well things all going on first rate.

Thursday 31st Left at 7 1/4 O'C A. M. 9 1/4 O'C rested 45 minutes 10 3/4 stoped and had tea 2 O'C P. M. rested 45 minutes. 4 1/2 O'C rested 25 minutes and camped at 6 1/2 O'C traveled 23 mile. A good spirit prevailing in Camp. Likewise good health.

#### AUGUST 1856

Friday 1st August A. M. Left at 7 1/4 O'C 10 O'C rested 40 minutes, 11 O'C stoped 2 3/4 hours and had tea. 3 1/2 O' C P.M. rested 30 minutes then camped at 6 O'C. Traveled 20 miles. The first part of this journey for about 6 miles was very sandy and very heavy drag the latter part very good. Weather hot all well.

Saturday 2nd Left at 6 3/4 O'C A. M. 9 O'C rested 30 minutes and had a first rate supply of spring water. Found a signal of Cap Ellsworths Company with particulars of their position when there and etc 11 O'C stoped 1 1/2 hours and had Tea 4 P. M. O'C rested 45 minutes and camped at 7 1/2 O'C Destitute of water and fuel here. Weather cool very heavy sand traveled through this day. Traveled 22 miles.

Sunday 3rd Rolled out from camp at 5 1/2 O'C A. M. Traveled over a very heavy sandy road. 9 O'C stoped 3 3/4 hours and tea. Bro McArthurs mule ran off this morning but caught him again. 4 O'C P. M. rested 45 minutes and camped at 6 1/4 O'C. Killed one heffier this day. Weather moderate. Road very sandy and heavy. Traveled 15 miles. All well and in good spirits.

Monday 4th Did not start till 1 1/2 O'C P. M. detained 1 hour fording the Creek which is a branch of the Platte

River rested about 30 minutes and camped at 6 O'C P. M. all well five exceptions. road a little soft in consequence of some rain the past night. Traveled 9 miles.

Tuesday 5th Bro Andrew Smith died this morning at 12 O'C A. M. buried at same place. Complaint diarrahaea. Company rolled out at 3 1/4 O'C P. M. and camped at 6 1/4 O'C All well with 3 or 4 exceptions who are in mending condition. Traveled 8 miles.

Wednesday 6th Left at 6 1/2 O'C A.M. 9 1/2 O'C rested 25 minutes 11 1/4 O'C stoped 1 hour and 40 minutes for dinner and camped at 5 O'C P.M. all well extremem hot day but a pretty road. Traveled 16 miles

Thursday 7th Rolled from Camp at 6 3/4 O'C A.M. 9 O'C rested 30 minutes 11 O'C rested 30 Min 2 O'C stoped for dinner 1 3/4 hour and camped at 5 3/4 O'C at a deep dry creek. Traveled 24 miles. Weather very moderate and cool. Road level. All well and in Good spirits.

Friday 8th Started at 7 O'C A.M. 11 O'C stoped took dinner and hunted buffalo for 5 1/2 hours. Killed one then camped at 8 1/2 O'C P.M. Weather cool and road Good. All well. Traveled 14 miles.

Saturday 9th Rolled out from camp ground at 4 3/4 A. M. 6 O'C stoped took breakfast and hunted fuffalo for 6 1/4 hours killed two. 2 O'C P.M. stoped 2 3/4 hours took dinner and delt out provisions and camped at 6 O'C. All well traveled 11 miles.

Sunday 10th remained in camp all day. In the evening a meeting was called when Bros. McArthur, Leonard and Crandall addressed the meeting in a very appropriate manner exhorting the saints to faithfulness. All felt well and a good spirit exists throughout the camp. Killed one buffalo today.

Monday 11th Left the camp ground at 6 1/4 O'C A.M. stoped during the journey 3 3/4 hours and camped at 6 1/4 O'C P.M. traveled 19 Miles. All well weather hot. Road very bad with heavy sand.

Tuesday 12th A.M. Started 7 O'C stoped during journey for all purposes. 3 3/4 hours P.M. camped at 6 1/2 O'C extreme heavy sand today. Very heavy rain. Met a man today traveling across the plains without any food or a single article but by the goodness of Captain McArthur he was soon supplied with some meat and Bread.

Upon enquiring it ascertained he had been deserted by some California Gold Diggers on these wild prarries. Whether his story was valid or not is not for to determine, Traveled this day 15 miles.

Wednesday 13th Started at 10 O'C A.M. detained in consequence of heavy rain. Stoped during journey 2 hours and camped at 6 O'C P.M. all well 3 or 4 exceptions by the road being soft it was a continual drag all day. Heavy sand part of the road. Traveled 15 miles

Thursday 14th Started at 5 1/2 O'C A.M. 7 O'C rested 20 minutes and had a refreshing drink of pure spring water 8 3/4 O'C stoped 3 1/2 hours had all the tents put up and dried. Clothes put out to day and all things put right. Took Breakfast then started and camped 5 1/2 O'C P.M. All well and in good spirits. One Box Cart broke down today Forded a small stream. Weather Moderate, Traveled 19 miles.

Friday 15th Started at 6 3/4 O'C A.M. stoped at 11 O'C A.M. stoped 1 1/2 hour for Breakfast. P. M. 3 O'C rested 20 minutes. Forded 5 small creeks and camped at 4 O'C. All well, Weather mild and good. Traveled 17 miles.

Saturday 16th A.M. Started at 5 O'C stoped 1 1/2 hours for breakfast 12 O'C for dinner 2 1/2 hours P. M. 4 1/2 O'C rested 15 minutes then camped at 5 3/4 O'C this day

sister Mary Bathgate was bitten by a Rattle Snake in the leg. In a dangerous looking condition likewise Sister Isabella Park got her leg severaly bruized in consequence of the waggon wheel running over it. Weather hot. crossed the Bluffs today. Had a very heavy drag through the sand. Traveled 20 miles.

Sunday 17th Remained in Camp did not start this day. At 6 1/2 O'C in the evening Susanna, (Daughter of Henry and Margaret E liker) Died of the Black Canker. About 9 O'C a meeting was held and a glorious time was realized by all present. Brothers McArthur, Lenord and Crandall addressed the meeting and each took up a lengthy time in laying before the Saints the importance of keeping faithfull to their duties cease all murmuring and complaining and to seek to cultivate a spirit of meekness and humility and in a word to do all in their power to further this Camp for it lay upon each to do so. In fact all felt happy and determined to go on. Meeting separated under the blessing of God.

Monday 18th Susanna E liker was buried this morning at the Camp Ground at 6 1/2 O'C A.M. The company then rolled out after the Solom act was attended too. At 8 1/2 O'C the Company rested 30 minutes. At 11 O'C stoped 2 hours for dinner then started and camped at 5 O'C P.M. Road very bad with heavy sand. Weather Cool. Traveled 18 miles.

Tuesday 19th Started at 6 3/4 O'C A.M. 9 1/4 rested 15 minutes 11 1/2 O'C stoped 1 3/4 hours for dinner 4 O'C rested 30 minutes then camped at 5 1/2 O'C P.M. all well Extremely heavy traveling all day through heavy sand Weather very Hot Traveled 19 miles.

Wednesday 20th Started at 6 1/2 O'C A.M. 12 O'C stoped for dinner till 1 1/4 O'C P.M. then started and camped at 6 O'C. all well traveled over very heavy sandy Bluffs. weather very cool in the morning but hot in the afternoon. Traveled 19 miles.

Thursday 21st Started at 7 1/4 O'C A.M. 10 1/2 O'C rested 45 minutes. 12 1/2 O'C stoped 2 hours for dinner then started and traveled till 5 1/2 O'C when we camped Road good. Weather moderate Traveled 20 miles all well, with few exceptions. A good spirit prevailing in camp little or no grumbling.

Friday 22nd Rolled out at 7 O'C A.M. 9O'C rested 15 minutes 12 O'C stoped for dinner 2 hours 3 O'C P.M. stoped from a heavy rain 30 minutes. Camped at 6 1/2 O'C all well Weather Cool. Road pretty good. Traveled 22 Miles.

Saturday 23rd Started at 7 O'C 10 O'C rested 30 minutes 12 O'C stoped for dinner till 1 3/4 O'C P.M. then started and camped at 5 3/4 O'C All Well. Weather moderate. Road pretty good. Traveled 24 miles.

Sunday 24th Remained in Camp all day. A Meeting was held in the evening and the saints received good instruction concerning their duties from Capt'n McArthur and others.

Monday 25th Company rolled out from Camp ground at 6 1/2 O'Clock A.M. At 9 O'Clock the company rested 30 minutes 12 O'Clock stoped for dinner 2 hours then started and traveled till 6 1/2 O'Clock P.M. when the Company camped for the day. Weather cool and road good. Traveled 26 miles. all well today and in good spirits.

Tuesday 26th Started at 7 1/4 O'Clock A.M. rested for 25 minutes at 9 1/2 O'Clock stoped for dinner at 12 O'Clock 2 hours then started and traveled till 6 1/2 O'C when we camped. all well, a good spirit prevailing in Camp. Weather very hot today. Road very bad. Traveled 14 miles.

Wednesday 27th Started at 7 O'C a.M. rested 15 minutes at 9 O'C at 12 3/4 O'C P.M. the company stoped for dinner

till 2 3/4 O'C camped at 5 1/2 O'C Weather very hot and road real bad. Saints all well and in good spirits traveled 21 miles.

Thursday 28th Started at 7 1/2 O'C and camped at 6 1/2 O'C P.M. Stoped during journey crossing the Platte detention at at Fort Larmie and etc about 4 Hours. traveled 13 miles. Old Sister Marg and Maxwell remained at the Fort.

Friday 29th Started at 7 1/2 O'C A.M. Stoped 2 hours for dinner at 12 O'C camped at 6 O'C P.M. crossed the ridge of mountains intervening between the Fort and the river. Weather cold. Road Good. Traveled 21 miles All Well.

Saturday 30th Started at 7 1/2 O'C A.M. 12 O'C stoped for dinner 1 1/2 hours then started and traveled till 6 1/4 O'C P.M. when we camped for the day. Weather in good condition for traveling Road good. The saints all felt unaminous in prosecuting their journey and in fact the whole camp realized the hand of God in favour of preservation and prosperity.

Sunday 31st Remained in Camp did not travel any this day. Killed one ox for the benefit of the Company.

#### SEPTEMBER 1856

Monday 1st September Started at 7 1/2 O'C A.M. 10 O'C rested 15 minutes crossed the Platte then stoped for Dinner 2 hours Camped at 7 1/4 O'C O.M. Weather Hot and Road bad Traveled 25 miles.

Tuesday 2nd started at 8 O'C stoped for dinner 2 1/4 hours forded another crossing of the Platte and camped at 7 O'C P.M. Weather cool with a refreshing breeze. Road Good. Met the waggons today from the Valley at Dear Creek with Flour for the Saints. Traveled 25 miles

Wednesday 3rd Started this morning at 7 1/2 O'C A.M. rested 15 minutes at 10 O'C. Stopped at 12 1/2 O'C for Dinner 1 1/2 hours. This day one of our cows died. Weather moderate and Road good. Camped at 7 O'Clock. Traveled 22 miles. Camp all well and in good spirits.

Thursday 4th Rolled out from Camp this morning at 7 1/2 O'Clock A.M. rested 20 minutes at 10 O'Clock. stopped at 11 1/2 O'C for dinner 2 1/4 hours. Camped at 5 1/2. Traveled 16 miles. Forded the last crossing of the Platte this day which was exceeding deep and difficult to ford. Saints all well today and Still retaining the Spirit of the Lord.

Friday 5th In consequence of a heavy rain the Company was prevented from traveling today. Snow was discovered to be on the surrounding hills to the depth of about three or four feet. Because of this the air was very cold and Chilly. Had pretty good feed for cattle. favored also with plenty of fuel and water. Got a great deal of timber and made splended large fires round the Camp which tended to make us Comfortable.

Saturday 6th Left the Platte this morning 7 1/2 O'Clock A.M. rested 15 minutes at 11 1/2 O'C at 1 O'Clock stopped for dinner 1 hour and 15 minutes then started out and traveled till 3 3/4 O'Clock when we camped for the day. The reason why we camped so soon today was to attend to the killing of a cow (attended to) Another preventative for not traveling was in consequence of a scarecty of feed for Cattle. Crossed two Creeks which was swollen to a good extent by the snows etc. Traveled 14 miles. Weather cold. Road bad.

Sunday 7th Started at 7 O'Clock A.M. rested 30 minutes at 9 O'Clock stopped from 1 to 3 O'Clock P. M. for dinner then traveled till 6 O'C when the company Camped. Traveled 21 miles. Weather good. Road a little hilly.

Monday 8th Started at 7 O'Clock A.M. stoped 2 1/2 hours for dinner at 12 O'Clock then started and camped at 6 O'Clock P.M. Traveled 18 miles. Very indifferent feed for Cattle but plenty of water. A brother named Conroad Eilker was found a missing from our Camp this morning. in fact it was asserntained he had not made the camp on the night previous. Bro McArthur in company with one of the brethern and mule team from the valley went back in search of him, but returned without finding any traces of him. This caused great sorrow in Camp and particularly with his Parents. It was concluded he had been picked up by some Californians who passed us for the States. he was 20 years of age. Made the Sweet River today.

Tuesday 9th Started at 7 O'Clock A.M. Stopped at 9 1/2 for 20 minutes 11 1/2 O'Clock stoped for dinner till 1 1/2 O'Clock P.M. then started and traveled till 5 1/2 O'Clock when we Camped. Weather very Cold and windy passed "Devils Gate" today. One of the waggons and one open cart broke down today. Traveled 20 miles Camp all in good health.

Wednesday 10th Started at 9 O'Clock this morning. Stopped from 12 1/2 to 2 1/4 O'Clock P.M. for Dinner Camped at 5 O'Clock. Weather moderate, Road good forded the first crossing of Sweet Water. Traveled 19 miles, all well.

Thursday 11th Started at 9 O'Clock A.M. Stopped from 11 1/2 till 1 1/2 O'Clock P.M. for dinner then traveled till 10 1/2 O'Clock when we camped. Overtood Cap Ellsworths Company today. Camped beside him. forded the Sweet Water four times. Part of the Raod good and part bad. Weather good Traveled 30 miles. A good spirit prevailing in our company.

Friday 12th Started at 9 O'C A.M. stoped from 12 1/2 till 2 1/2 O'Clock P.M. for dinner then started and camped



at 4 O'C Traveled 12 miles Camp all well and in good health.

Saturday 13th Started at 7 1/2 O'Clock A.M. stoped from 12 to 2 O'C P.M. for dinner Started and traveled till 5 O'Clock when the Company Camped at the last crossing of Sweet Water at 5 O'Clock. Weather and Road good. Traveled 17 miles.

Sunday 14th Started at 7 1/2 O'Clock A.M. stoped from 12 till 1 1/2 O'Clock P.M. for dinner then started and traveled till 4 1/2 O'Clock Camped at Pacific Creek traveled 18 miles and held meeting today and had excellent discourses from the brethern.

Monday 15th Started at 9 1/2 O'Clock A.M. stoped from 12 till 1 1/2 O'C P.M. for dinner then started and traveled till 9 1/2 O'Clock Camped at Little Sandy Creek Traveled 26 miles Saints all well and in good spirits.

Tuesday 16th Remained in Camp all day attended to the washing of Clothes and etc and getting other necessary articles attended to.

Wednesday 17th Left Little Sandy Creek at 6 1/2 O'Clock A.M. rested 30 minutes at 10 O'Clk stoped from 12 till 1 1/2 O'Clk P.M. for dinner Camped at 5 1/4 O'Clk at Big Sandy Creek which we forded. Traveled 25 miles.

Thursday 18th Left Big Sandy Creek at 7 1/2 O'Clk A.M. rested 15 minutes at 9 O'Clk Stoped from 12 till 1 1/2 O'Clk P.M. for Dinner. Crossed the Green River and camped at 4 1/2 O'Clk. In consequence of being 16 miles to the nearest camping point the company had to remain here for the night. Elder Pratt and Co. passed here about one hour before our arrival and took a different rout. Traveled this day 16 miles. Saints all well.

Friday 19th Left the Green River at 20 minutes passed 6 O'Clock A.M. rested 45 minutes at 10 O'Clock Stoped from 12 O'Clock till 3 for Dinner and to give the cattle an oppertunity to have some feed, then started and traveled till 5 O'Clock Camped (if I mistake not) at Black Fork River which we crossed Traveled 24 miles.

Saturday 20th This morning at or about 4 O'Clock the Camp was alarmed by hearing that brother Henry Eliker was got lying dead in bed. The rumour was found to be a fact he died of Diarrehaea burried at same place Aged 59 years. The company rolled out at 6 1/2 O'Clock A.M. rested 30 minutes at 10 O'Clk stoped from 12 till 2 O'Clk P.M. for dinner then started and traveled till 8 O'Clk Camped at Fort Bridger overtook Cap Ellsworth's Co here again. Traveled 30 miles

Sunday 21st Did not start this day till 2 O'Clk P.M. as the killing of an ox and etc had to be attended to. Traveled 12 miles and camped at 5 O'Clk at Cold Spring Creek.

Monday 22nd Left Cold Spring Creek at 7 1/2 O'Clk at 5 O'Clk this morning Margt wife of George Muir was delivered of a son. both Mother and Child is in a healthy condition Company stoped for dinner at 12 till 2 O'Clk P.M. then traveled till 5 1/2 O'Clk Camped at Bear River.

Tuesday 23rd This morning John McCleeve was found lying dead in bed he had been badly for some time previous with the Diarrhaea Age 48 years.

Wednesday 24th Started at 8 O'Clock this morning stoped for dinner from 12 till 2 O'Clock then started and traveled till 6 O'Clock Camped in Echo Kynon Saints all Well

Thursday 25th Left Echo Kynon at 6 O'Clock A.M. Stoped for dinner from 12 till 1 1/2 O'Clock P.M. then traveled till 9 O'Clock Camped on the Big Mountain.

Friday 26th Started from the Big Mountain at 5 O'Clock stoped and had breakfast from 8 1/2 til 12 O'Clock opportunity was also given to the saints for to get washed and get themselves Cleaned up. here also the Saints hearts was made to rejoice by a fresh supply of provisions being sent out from the Valley by our beloved brother Brigham. The Company then rolled over the Little Mountain at the foot of which they were met by Brigham and his splendid escort. attended with music which tended to cheer and enliven their hearts and drown the trouble and difficulties which they had passed through they were escorted through the City to the square where they arrived at Sun Set thus having completed the journey in 8 weeks and two days from Florence to Great Salt Lake City. This day at the little Mountain William Heaton son of William and Christopher Heaton died of inflammation of the Bowels.

In conclusion I would remark that throughout the whole journey the Mainfold blessings of the Lord was displayed remarkably in their favour and peace and contentment seemed to be the general characterestes of the whole company and for this and other blessings our Captain felt a pleasure in conducting us over the plains. In consequence of not being supplied with a guide for the journey a great many of the names of the places could not be ascertained.

Respectfully,

D. D. McArthur, Capt  
Wm Wright, Clerk

## Epilogue

Some interesting stories are told about the trip. Some of them elaborate on incidents in the Wright record, others have been told at family gatherings throughout the years.

Captain McArthur rode a brown mule that seemed to create some problems. On two occasions the company stopped to bring the mule back to camp.

Before the handcart company left camp, Captain McArthur received a strong impression to cut a stout shepherd's crook from the willows growing along the stream. This seemed such an unusual and unnecessary thing for him to do that he tried to forget it. Again he was urged to cut him a shepherd's crook. He knew there were no sheep along the trail and that he would be the joke of the company, but he was ready for their jokes. Captain McArthur selected a nice Hickory sapling and cut it down. For some time he painstakingly fashioned one end of this young tree into a "shepherd's crook". As was expected, some of the brothers and sisters questioned the wisdom of Brother McArthur taking time for such a trivial thing. He didn't have long to wait to see the purpose of the "strong impression".

The saints, except the aged and sick, walked every mile of the way. On occasion they would find the sandy road too heavy to pull, or a stream crossing so slick in mud that it was impossible to move the carts. Brother McArthur was prepared. He rode a big mule as he traveled back and forth along the line of march, and when he saw the trouble they were having he would hook his stout crook into the spokes of the wheel and spurred his mule into pulling with all its

might. When the troubled cart was pulled out, he and his mule went back to help the next one. And so he stayed until all the carts had passed the trouble spot in safety and were on their way again.

A humorous incident in the trip was created by a young girl in the company who never tired in her efforts to help others and make their load as light as possible. She could always see the humor in everything. Captain McArthur always rode a brown mule to check up on the company making sure that all who needed help were cared for. This girl always insisted upon riding behind Brother McArthur when the handcarts crossed streams. One day when Captain McArthur started to ford a stream she yelled, "Captain Dan, don't go without me." She ran to the bank of the stream and lifting her long skirts, made a jump for the back of the mule. The mule reared and the young girl landed in the middle of the stream. This caused a hearty laugh and the others went across good naturedly.

Captain McArthur gave the following report on carts:

"Our carts, when we started, were in an awful fix. They moaned and growled, screeched and squealed, so that a person could hear them for miles. You may think this stretching things a little too much, but it is a fact, and we had them to eternally patch, mornings, noons and nights. But by our industry we got them all along to Florence when we arrived July 8, 1856, and being obliged to stop at Florence some two weeks to get our outfit for the plains, I and my council, namely, Truman Leonard and Spencer Crandall, went to work and gave our carts a thorough repair throughout."

#### Parker Child Lost

The incident of the Parker child lost July 1st is mentioned by records kept in the accounts of the McArthur and Ellsworth Companies.

Arthur Parker, son of Robert and Ann Parker sat down to rest and when he was determined not to be in camp Captain McArthur with others started to search for the boy. The Company rested for two days while the search continued. He was not located. It was determined that the Company would continue and that Brother Parker would search for the boy and catch up with the camp as soon as possible.

Sister Parker gave Brother Parker a bright shawl with instructions that if he found the boy dead, he was to wrap him in the shawl; if alive, the shawl would be a flag to signal her. The remainder of the Parker family moved on with the McArthur Company.

On the third evening saints in Camp caught the glimmer of a bright shawl. Brother Parker and Arthur were home. The Camp rejoiced exceedingly.

#### Mary Bathgate - Isabella Park.

Sister Mary Bathgate was known as "the ring leader of the footmen or those who did not pull handcarts", she was usually accompanied by Sister Isabella Park. They were both in their 60's and neither of them had ridden an inch since they left the Iowa Campground.

Sister Bathgate sent a little girl to Captain McArthur to bring Brothers Leonard and Crandall and to bring some oil because she had been bitten by a rattlesnake while walking about one half mile ahead of the camp. Captain McArthur found Sister Bathgate with a snake bite on the back of her leg near her ankle. She had presence of mind to tie a garter on her leg to slow down the circulation and although she looked very bad she expressed confidence in the Power of Priesthood and assured all that she would be all right. Her head and leg were annointed and the effect of the poison was rebuked by the laying on of hands in the name of Jesus Christ by the Power of the Priesthood. She was then told to

get in a wagon and ride. She refused. She called witnesses to prove that she did not get into the wagon until she was compelled to by the cursed snake.

Sister Park ran in before the wagon to see how her companion was. The driver, not seeing her, hallooed at his team and they being quick to mind, started the wagon and the fore wheel struck her and passed over both her hips. Brother Leonard attempted to pull her away from the wagon but was not successful. The hind wheel caught her and passed over both ankles. The wagon was loaded with four thousand pounds of weight. Everyone thought that Sister Park would be mashed beyond being saved. Examination revealed that she had no broken bones.

The same medicine was applied that was given to the sister who was bitten by the rattlesnake. Both Sisters were quite sore for a few days but Sister Park was on the tramp before the Company reached the Great Salt Lake City and Sister Bathgate was right by her side to cheer her up.

Some people said it was just good luck. Captain Dan said, "I know that nothing but the power of God saved the two sisters."

Capt'n Dan's Handcarts to Utah had reached their destination, camped on the square in Salt Lake City, prepared a first-rate meal and the Captain had made a report to President Young. President Young suggested that it would be appropriate for Daniel D. to go home and greet his family after such a long absence. He said "Go home and God bless you."

What an exciting reunion, recounting experiences of long ocean voyages, the wonders of other lands, stories of the handcart journey, listening to reports of things that happened at home during his absence and getting to know a daughter who was just a few weeks old when the great missionary venture began.

It was indeed time to meet old friends, prepare for upcoming events and getting involved in church and community events. Members had become rather careless in their way of life because of the prosperity they enjoyed. Some had forgotten the many blessings they had received and altered their life style to suit their state of prosperity.

**ACTIVITIES IN  
NORTHERN UTAH**

October 7, 1856 Daniel D. McArthur addressed the semi-annual conference of the Church on the subject of the necessity for the Saints to live a prayerful life.

A call came to D. D. to be a home missionary through the great reformation of 1856 and 1857. Much time was spent in preaching the gospel and bringing members back into the fold.

April 20, 1857, the Deseret News published news of the organization of the Great Salt Lake Military District, an extension of the Nauvoo Legion. Daniel D. McArthur was appointed to serve in the military organization as a Major under the command of General George D. Grant.

In the spring of 1857 Major D. D. was called to go to Devil's Gate on the Sweetwater and bring up those emigrants of 1856 who started for the Valley late in the season and as a result suffered terrible privations, as a result of hunger, cold and attacks by Indians. The trip was made safely and the emigrants arrived in Salt Lake in August.

On July 24, 1857, the saints were gathered at Silver Lake at the head of Big Cottonwood Canyon, thirty miles from Salt Lake City celebrating the tenth anniversary of the arrival of the Saints in Salt Lake Valley. During the day of this activity President Young was advised of a detachment of Federal Troops headed for the west. Rumors persisted that the army was a "secret mission" to destroy the church and put the Mormon problem to rest for good. Scouts disguised as California gold diggers traveled with the army. Riders kept President Young advised as to the location and activities of the troops and the military might of the Church was gathered to guarantee that the saints would never again endure conditions experienced before coming to the valleys of the mountains.

Instructions were given by D. H. Wells to "Use every exertion to stampede their animals, and set fire to their (supply) trains. Burn the whole country before them and on their flanks. Keep them from sleeping by night surprise; blockade the road by falling trees or destroying the river fords where you can. Watch for opportunities to set fire to the grass before them that can be burned. . . Take no life, but destroy their trains and stampede or drive away their animals, at every opportunity."

Major McArthur and the men under his command went into the mountains and joined others in conducting a "hit and run" warfare that proved to be one of the most successful military operations in western history. A reported 1,000 head of cattle were sent into Salt Lake Valley as a result of this operation. The method of attack was so successful that Senator Sam Houston, on the floor of the United States Senate stated, "fifty thousand would be as inefficient as two or three thousand. . . Consider the facilities these people have to cut off your supplies. . . These people expect nothing but extermination or abuse more intolerable than even extermination would be, from your troops, and they will oppose them."

The Federal military operation in the Utah territory proved to be a total failure and politically unpopular. Before winter was over the Federal Troops were ready to withdraw peaceably from the whole affair, if a reasonable way was offered. A Peace Commission arrived in Salt Lake City June 7th and presented President Young with the means for a peaceful solution to the problem. The army was to pass through Salt Lake City and camp approximately forty miles from the City. There would be no further military action against the Church.

The Saints did not trust the army and before the move was authorized people with all of their livestock and belongings moved out of the Valley to the south. Straw was placed in

the buildings with the understanding that everything would be burned if any overt action was taken by the army.

Major D. D. McArthur received the following letter:

Provo City June 7th 1858

Major D. D. McArthur

Dear Brother

Owing to the scattered condition of the forces of G. S. Lake Military District and to aid Gen'l Grant in the distribution of orders in accordance with instructions this day forwarded to him, you are hereby required to hunt up as far as possible your command and have them in readiness to repair at a moments notice to G. S. L. City for the purpose of irrigating their crops and taking care of their property, and be prepared otherwise to perform such duties as may be required of them. Let those who can, go immediately as the grain in many places now needs watering. As you arrive in the City you will report yourself and number of your command on duty to Bro. G. D. Grant who will proceed to assign you, your portion and scene of duties, and from whom you will receive further instructions pertaining to this subject. This movement must be made without any fuss, parade, noise or disorder, but operate quietly, firmly and determinedly in regard to this whole business: in a particular manner, should there be no drinking of liquor and carousing or disorderly conduct of any kind. Let the brethren when they arrive at the scene of their duties, remain patiently and quietly until they are released by their proper Officer.

As ever, your brother in Christ

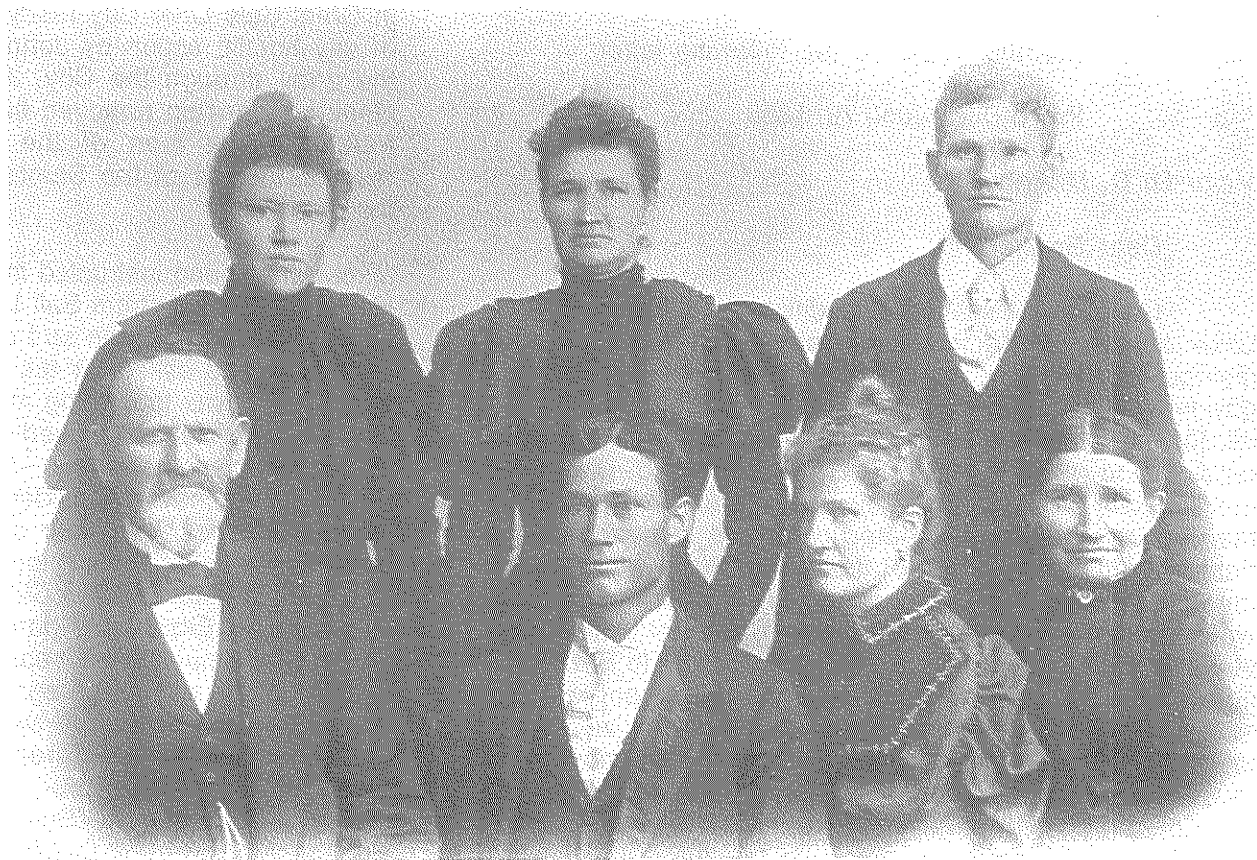
Daniel H. Wells

As per instructions contained in the letter, Major McArthur and the men under his command were stationed in Great Sale Lake City ready to burn the City in the event of any hostile action by Johnston's Army. The moving of the army through the City, June 26, 1858, was flawless. General Johnston removed his hat and bowed his head in tribute to the men of the Mormon Battalion and the resourcefulness of the Saints in defending their homes in the mountains.

"President Young instructed me to get another wife at once. Having been away from Salt Lake for so long I did not know many unmarried women so I called on a friend by the name of Bullock and asked for his daughter's hand. He said he thought she was too young at that time, being only fourteen years of age, so I continued my search and asked Brother Hill for his daughter Mary. In the meantime, Brother and Sister Bullock had reconsidered the proposal and informed me that I could have their daughter Elizabeth. So I took both these girls, marrying them the Same day, 13 February 1858, in the Salt Lake Endowment House. Returning to Elizabeth's home I left her with her parents where she remained two years and then came to me as my wife when she was at the age of sixteen." Of the union with Mary Hill three children were born; Margaret McArthur, 24 December 1861; Maranda McArthur, 16 July 1865, and Experience McArthur, 14 December 1868. Of the union with Elizabeth Bullock six children were born; Eugena McArthur, 4 December 1860; George McArthur, 16 June 1866; Isabelle McArthur, 13 July 1868; James McArthur, 29 January 1871; Emeline McArthur, 24 February 1874 and Moroni McArthur, 25 April 1877.

January 4, 1858, Daniel Duncan McArthur was set apart as the senior president of the 57th quorum of Seventy.

The locating of Johnston's army some forty miles south of Salt Lake City did not bring an end to the harassment of the Saints by United States Government. Some of the officials



Back row Emeline - Eugenia - Moroni  
Front row Daniel D. - James - Isabelle - Elizabeth Bullock



appointed as judges, etc., continued to cause considerable nuisance. A good example was the calling of a Grand Jury in the Second District Court in Provo, March 1859. D. D. was a member of said jury.

John Cradlebaugh convened the jury to investigate various actions of the saints including, among others, the Mountain Meadow Massacre; murders of Potter and Parrish, Henry Fobbs, Henry Jones and his mother.

The jury did not move quick enough with the interrogation of possible witnesses, so Judge Cradlebaugh issued bench warrants to hurry the process. General Johnston sent 100 men who took up quarters in the basement of the Provo Seminary Building. Some of these soldiers were in the jury room, intimidating the jury and in general caused a nuisance. The jury members complained to the Governor, the Governor told General Johnston to remove the troops, Johnston refused and the entire judicial action stalled.

In a rage of anger Judge Cradlebaugh dismissed the jury with the following statement. "The whole community presents a united and organized opposition to the administration of justice."

The members of the jury advised the Judge that they were doing the best they could under existing conditions, accepted his dismissal and went about their business.

Times became more critical. On one occasion Governor Cumming and the Utah militia were on one side of a dispute with General Johnston and the troops at Camp Floyd on the other. Five thousand men came to the aid of the Governor. The confrontation never occurred. Things remained on edge until the outbreak of the Civil War, at which time the troops were removed from Utah.

Daniel D. was kept busy with Church and family activities. Much time was spent working in the seventies calling,

helping to settle new arrivals in the Valley, developing water projects in Utah County, keeping his Nauvoo Legion detachment ready and available at all times and in general, doing everything the Prophet directed.

The first part of the document discusses the importance of maintaining accurate records of all business transactions. This includes not only sales and purchases but also expenses and income. Proper record keeping is essential for tax purposes and for determining the financial health of the business.

The second part of the document describes the various methods used to collect and analyze data. This includes surveys, interviews, and focus groups. Each method has its own strengths and weaknesses, and the choice of method depends on the specific needs of the study.

The third part of the document discusses the importance of sample size and representativeness. A large sample size is necessary to ensure that the results are statistically significant. Additionally, the sample must be representative of the population being studied to ensure that the findings are applicable to the whole.

The fourth part of the document describes the various statistical tests used to analyze data. This includes t-tests, chi-square tests, and regression analysis. Each test is used to determine the significance of the results and to identify any relationships between variables.

The fifth part of the document discusses the importance of data visualization. This includes the use of charts, graphs, and tables to present the results in a clear and concise manner. Data visualization is essential for identifying trends and patterns in the data.

The sixth part of the document discusses the importance of data security. This includes the use of encryption, firewalls, and other security measures to protect the data from unauthorized access. Data security is essential for maintaining the integrity and confidentiality of the information.

The seventh part of the document discusses the importance of data backup. This includes the use of backup software and hardware to ensure that the data is safe in the event of a disaster. Data backup is essential for preventing data loss and ensuring business continuity.

The eighth part of the document discusses the importance of data archiving. This includes the use of archival software and hardware to store data for long-term use. Data archiving is essential for preserving historical data and ensuring that it is accessible when needed.

The ninth part of the document discusses the importance of data governance. This includes the use of policies and procedures to ensure that the data is managed in a consistent and compliant manner. Data governance is essential for ensuring that the data is accurate, reliable, and secure.

The tenth part of the document discusses the importance of data privacy. This includes the use of privacy policies and procedures to ensure that the data is used in a way that respects the rights of individuals. Data privacy is essential for building trust and maintaining a positive reputation.

# **THE DIXIE EXPERIENCE**

12-11-1918



DANIEL D. McARTHUR HOME  
179 West Tabernacle  
St. George Utah



### The St. George Song

O what a desert place was this  
 When first the Mormons found it,  
 They said no white man here could live  
 And Indians prowled around it.  
 They said the land it was no good  
 And the water was no gooder,  
 And the bare idea of living here  
 Was enough to make men shudder.

### CHORUS

Mesquite, Soap Root,  
 Prickley Pears and Briars  
 St. George ere long  
 Will be the place  
 That everyone Admires.

The Sun it is so scorching-hot  
 It makes the water siz, Sir  
 And the reason that it is so hot,  
 Is just because it is Sir.  
 The wind with fury here doth blow  
 That when we plant or sow, Sir,  
 We place a foot upon the seed  
 And hold them till they grow, Sir.

Now green Lucern in verdant spots  
 Bedecks our thriving City,  
 Whilst vines and fruit trees grace our lots  
 With flowers sweet and pretty.  
 Where once the grass in single blades  
 Grew a mile apart in distance,  
 And it kept the Crickets on the hop  
 To pick up their subsistence.

by Charles Walker

The 'Sir' referred to in this song was Brigham Young. Settlers in the St. George Valley thought it in-appropriate to tell the Prophet what they thought of his St. George settlement, but it was acceptable to sing about St. George and Brigham Young apparently accepted the song as part of the Dixie Experience.

The music was written by Samuel L. Adams, who also sang the song on various occasions in St. George.

At the October General Conference which commenced on Sunday, October 6, 1861, a large number of the Saints were called to settle in Southern Utah. Daniel D. and his families were among those called and were instructed to separate themselves from all of their belongings, "don't leave a single calf tied any place" and go. Belongings were converted to cash and traveling equipment and the emigration to St. George began. Among the items brought to St. George by the McArthur family were a key wind pocket watch, one of five time pieces brought to the valley at that time and the watch fob that Brother McArthur had acquired from the Prophet Joseph in exchange for a horse the Prophet rode to lead the Nauvoo Legion.

By the first week in December the saints had arrived in St. George - camped on the east side of the Valley, living in their wagon boxes and tents - and began the task of establishing a city. Daniel D. was chosen and sustained as a member of the first Camp Council on the 5th day of December 1861.

Tuesday, the 24th day of December, 1861, the first white female child was born in the valley. A daughter to Daniel D. and Mary Hill McArthur. They named her Margaret.

On December 25th it started to rain in Dixie and rained more or less every day for 40 days. To say the least, much time was spent in digging the clay off boots and shoes. The sticky mess became burdensome and had to be removed, too heavy to carry about.

On the 9th of January, 1862, President Snow suggested that the saints should build a stone building to be used by the citizens for educational and social purposes. One hundred and twenty people pledged money to this project. Only one pledged more than D. D. McArthur. Not one of these contributors had a roof over his head at this time.

D. D. became a Constable to the County Court, held at Washington, 3 March 1862. From the beginning of the colony he retained his position as a military person and was most influential in maintaining law and order in the area.

Saturday, 22 March 1862, Daniel D. became the bishop of the 3rd Ward in St. George and Sunday, 23 March, he became first counselor to Robert Gardner, who was the presiding bishop in the St. George area. Bishop McArthur was ordained a High Priest by Erastus Snow the 15th of November 1862.

Community service was a must. He assisted in laying out the lots and blocks in St. George and was commissioned to assist in locating a new road from Harmony to St. George.

Raising a family in St. George was difficult. Food was sometimes scarce and although there was enough water to meet the needs of the City, it was the source of origin of much disease and many children died during the early years of the settlement. The week of February 20, 1863, was a week of great tragedy in the McArthur family. Manuscript records of the original St. George Third Ward show that three McArthur children; Mahala and Caroline, daughters of Matilda Caroline McArthur and Margaret, daughter of Mary Hill McArthur, died between February 20th and February 24th.

On 15 March 1863, word was received that this county would be expected to furnish 55 oxen or mule teams with wagons equipped and supplied for a five or six months journey to bring poor saints to Utah. The letter had a short paragraph - "D. D. McArthur of St. George has been chosen to take charge of your teams as captain. Please inform him of this fact." On Sunday, the 21st of March, President Snow blessed all those who had been called on this mission. The people sustained the blessing by a unanimous uplifting of hands. On November 26th and 27th social parties were



given in the St. George Hall in honor of Captain Daniel D. McArthur and returned teamsters and guards of this season's emigration.

Roaming bands of Indians seemed to always be around to steal oxen, cows, horses or anything else not guarded. In an effort to curtail such actions a note was sent to the Navajos. "Do not let your thieves visit us again unless they make satisfaction for the horses they have stolen from our people, lest some of our angry men slay them." The raids continued in spite of the warning.

The McArthur family was assigned two city lots, located at 170 West Tabernacle. This was the location of the Big Red Rock McArthur home. All of the families lived together in the house and the children showed the same respect to the other mothers in the house as they did to their own mother. Land was acquired in the Santa Clara fields along the Santa Clara River. Between the two locations, most of the food requirements of the families were met.

The food supply was quite low in the valley and President Snow called for an inventory of available supply in an effort to see what could be done to care for the needy. On Saturday, the 19th of March, 1864, an inventory of breadstuff on hand was taken. D. D. McArthur reported the family number at 10; 500 pounds of breadstuff on hand and that his family "can provide for self." There was always a generous sharing of food from the McArthur supply with those in need. Frequently people came to the home for food. Such people always went on their way with a good supply of the necessities of life.

A letter dated 5 April 1864, signed by Daniel H. Well, the General commanding the Nauvoo Legion appointed Daniel D. McArthur Major of the 6th Battalion Iron Military District. The 24th of September, 1865, he received the

commission of Colonel of the 2nd Regiment Iron Military District of Utah and was instrumental in organizing various military units in the area. Many of the actions taken to protect life and livestock in the Southern Mission were organized and carried out by Colonel McArthur.

May 14, 1864, Bishop McArthur was elected a member of the High Council of the St. George Stake of Zion, a position he held until September 15, 1869.

January 11, 1866, a letter was dispatched to Colonel McArthur and William B. Maxwell advising that Indians had made a break on Brother Whitmore's ranch and have driven off all of his sheep on Monday night, the 8th. Brother Whitmore and Brother Robert McIntire went out on the range on Monday morning and have not been seen since, and we think they were killed. The letter asked for help to go and drive the Indians across the Colorado and help find Bros' Whitmore and McIntire.

Colonel McArthur gathered men from St. George and Washington and started for the McIntire ranch with 44 men on June 12th.

Under date of January 21, 1866, a letter was sent to Major Bentley advising him of actions to date. Two Indians were caught in the act of killing a beef and were taken prisoners. These prisoners claimed to know nothing of the fate of Bros' Whitmore and McIntire. "And although a rope was thrown across a beam and they were told that unless they told the truth they would be hanged, they still persisted in declaring ignorance of what had been done." A party went out attempting to locate other Indians. "Whilst this party was out, the Indian in camp was induced to confess his knowledge of the death and whereabouts of the bodies of Brothers Whitmore and McIntire. He went with a small party and showed the place where they lay. A wagon was sent out, and whilst those with the wagons were taking up the bodies, five prisoners were brought up to the place,

in charge of eleven men. They had some money, fresh sheepskins and a few other things, which stood as evidence against them of their guilt. This meeting was too much for the brethren to stand, so they turned the prisoners loose and shot them on the ground where the murdered bodies lay. Thus did retribution overtake them on the scene of their crime." The group then went on to locate other Indians who had been causing problems in the area. The letter was signed by Daniel D. McArthur, Col. Commanding and John D. L. Pearce, Aide-de-camp.

During the month of June, 1868, a call was received for the Southern area to again send teams and complete outfits to assist in gathering the poor. This operation started from the South under the charge of D. D. McArthur as Captain. They left Salt Lake City on the 15th of June and thus began their journey eastward to the terminus of the railroad at Benton.

The long and time consuming trip to Benton took Captain McArthur and company away from St. George during the summer months when all hands were needed to care for crops and livestock and prepare for the coming winter. Daniel D's complete trust in President Young and a total commitment to the Church and its needs made the trip easier to make. His families were quite capable of caring for themselves during the time of the journey and make preparations for the winter to follow. All went 'first rate' and a great reunion occurred when the company returned to St. George.

September 15, 1869, Daniel D. McArthur was called to act as presiding Bishop in southern Utah.

A mass meeting was held at St. George, March 29, 1870, to prepare a protest to the passage by the House of Representatives of the Hon. Shelby N. Cullom Bill, commonly known as the 'Anti-Polygamy Bill', which was entitled 'An act in aid of the execution of the laws in the

Territory of Utah and for other purposes'. At this meeting, Col. McArthur gave the opening prayer and was elected one of the Vice Presidents of the meeting.

The Bill was declared to be unconstitutional and an act of legislation and ostracism, never before heard of in a republican government and its parallel hardly to be found anywhere. The resolution was sent to the appropriate U. S. Senate Representatives in an effort to have the Bill stopped in the United States Senate.

During the month of April, 1870, a cooperative Live Stock Association was formed and Daniel D. McArthur was one of the original directors.

During the April conference of the Southern Mission, local authorities were sustained; including Daniel D. as Presiding Bishop of the St. George area, which included twenty-one wards.

The area covered by the Southern Mission included, in addition to the Utah wards, one county in Arizona and one county in Nevada. A great amount of time was spent in traveling through the area seeing to the needs of the people; organizing and re-organizing wards, and in general, seeing that the directions of the General Authorities were carried out.

On Friday, Saturday and Sunday, May 5th, 6th and 7th, 1871, the semi-annual conference of the Southern Mission was convened in the basement of the St. George Tabernacle. D. D. was again sustained Bishop of St. George and was also sustained as an assistant to Erastus Snow, Trustee, for building the St. George Tabernacle.

A most interesting telegraph communication was addressed to E. Snow and D. D. McArthur, dated Salt Lake, Sept. 30, 1871. "Put a good file of men at Pipe Springs, Kanab and

Par-reer through this moon, to watch the Navajos till their raiding season is past. (Signed) Brigham Young"

Bishop McArthur was present at the ground breaking for the St. George Temple, and throughout the construction period was a most generous contributor. President Young, wishing to hurry the construction of the building requested that D. D. put forth every effort to get the building material on the job. Bishop McArthur had teams steadily working but hired another teamster named Don Robbins and put an additional outfit onto the Temple construction program.

President Young extended his appreciation for the added effort and gave his assurance that, quote, "You wouldn't lose anything from this as he had a surprise in store for me just as soon as the Temple was finished and it was then, at the dedication of the Temple, that I received the call to go on my second mission to England."

When the City of St. George received its Charter in January 17, 1862, it was granted the control of the Santa Clara River, provided that said control did not interfere with water rights of settlers already located on the river system. Water was scarce and it soon became evident that water rights and use would have to be settled by the Court. St. George users believed that they were being denied water granted them under the Charter and the parties petitioned the Court to settle the various claims.

Settlers secured permission from the City Council of St. George and the citizens of the town of Santa Clara and petitioned the court to authorize the organization of an Irrigation District to cover all the cultivated lands lying from a point on the Santa Clara, called the Three Mile Place to the East wall surrounding the Tonaquint Field, inclusive. On motion duly made and seconded, Edward Bunker, Daniel D. McArthur and William Carter were appointed a committee to call and preside over a Mass Meeting for the

purpose of organizing an Irrigation Company in the said Irrigation District.

The Mass Meeting was called during December of 1871. Those attending the meeting agreed to the founding of the St. George Clara Field Canal Company and brought to an end the problem concerning water rights between the City of St. George and the Town of Santa Clara.

December 29, 1871, was a most important date in the history of St. George. On that date, Bishop Daniel D. McArthur and others met at the St. George Tabernacle to attend to and witness the laying of the last stone in the Tower.

Presidents Snow, Gates, Gardner and Bleak; Bishops McArthur, Milne, Eyring and Granger and others ascended to the top of the rockwork of the Tower. Elder Edward L. Parry, principal mason, announced that the cap-stone was ready for laying.

President Erastus Snow then offered a prayer of thanksgiving for the blessings vouchsafed by God to all concerned in the building of the St. George Tabernacle.

Through the years that followed Daniel D. conducted many meetings in the building as the Presiding Bishop of St. George and as a counselor to the Stake President and later as Stake President in the St. George Stake of Zion. Many stories were told of sermons delivered and the striking of the pulpit by President McArthur with his cane.

Bishop McArthur continued in his capacity as an assistant to President Erastus Snow, Trustee for building the St. George Tabernacle until the building was completed.

On April 10, 1871, Mary Frances Calloway married Daniel Duncan McArthur and became part of the McArthur family. She was born January 31, 1854. She was 17



Duncan  
Mary Francis Calloway  
Arthur  
    Wilford W.  
        Daniel D.  
Ellen

years old and Daniel D. was 51 years of age. To this union were born six children; Sybil, December 23, 1872; Duncan, August 10, 1875; Levi, September 8, 1879; Wilford Woodruff, April 30, 1884; Arthur, May 12, 1886, and Ellen, April 19, 1890.

Although D. D. stated, "My wives and my family lived in the same home, congenially and happy," Mary Frances believed that having her father select her husband was not quite the way she planned things. She was being courted by a very handsome young man at the time she was instructed by her father to marry Brother McArthur. The marriage went well. She became a very important member of the McArthur household.

From the minutes of a meeting held in the basement of the St. George Tabernacle, President Young said, ". . . that he considered that the children of St. George were growing up more heedless and disobedient than in any other town of the same size in the Territory, according to his knowledge."

At the same meeting, President Young referred to the Temple to be built in this place: and gave various instructions for location, construction, etc., of the building to be erected.

February 19, 1874, President Young addressed those present on the principles of the United Order and the organization of that Order. Robert Gardner was elected President and Daniel D. McArthur was elected Vice President.

Thursday, October 1, 1874, the Articles of Incorporation for The United Order of St. George were presented in Probate Court of Washington County. The names of subscribers indicated that Daniel D. McArthur was the second largest share holder subscribing 80 shares in the Corporation.

The schedule of property subscribed and paid to the United Order indicated that McArthur subscribed: wheat - \$46.00, 4 mules, 2 horses, 4 harnesses, 3 wagons with beds, bracket, racks, and hobbles, making a total of \$1,619.00. Only one of the twelve persons placing property in the order subscribed more than Bishop McArthur. Total subscriptions amounted to \$8,012.40.

Saturday, June 6th, 1874, a meeting was called relative to the establishing of trading posts on the Colorado - one at the mouth of the Pahreah and the other in the vicinity of the Ute Trail. At the Bishop's meeting it was also moved, seconded and carried that Robert Gardner, Alex. F. MacDonald and Daniel D. McArthur be a committee to call for men and means to establish the Posts named and D. D. McArthur assisting in selecting the locations for the Posts.

There was a legend among the Indians that when their leaders were visited by two visitors dressed in white they should follow their instructions. The story, as told, was that the visitors were indeed seen by the Indian leaders and they were told to join the Church.

As a result of this visitation, a large number of the Indian Nation were baptized and confirmed and some children were blessed. The performing of ordinances began March 19, 1875, and lasted until the last child was blessed March 23, 1875. During this period of time 163 were baptized and confirmed and 26 children were blessed. Of the number of ordinances performed, Bishop McArthur baptized 43, confirmed 29 and blessed 8 children. At the time of the baptisms the Indians were given food and clothing. Some took advantage of the gifts and requested the privilege of going through the process a second time. The request was denied and after considerable explanation, all departed in peace.

At 1:30 P.M. Wednesday, June 30, 1875, the last bent of the St. George Temple roof began to rise from the level of



SHE-BITS INDIANS

BAPTISMS - CONFIRMATIONS - BLESSING OF CHILDREN

March 19, 1875 through March 23, 1875

Baptised and Confirmed 163 Blessed 26.

the second main floor of the building. Many citizens were present to witness this event among them being. . . Bishop Daniel D. McArthur. In view of his considerable contribution to the Temple project, D. D. felt a great deal of pride in the accomplishments of this group of people who were working so diligently to complete this remarkable edifice.

September 26, 1875, Daniel D. McArthur was elected a Director of the Canaan Co-operative Stock Company.

The following circular was received from Presiding Bishop Hunter referring to a note sent to him signed by Brigham Young:

Bishop D. D. McArthur:

Dear Brethren: It is our wish that the Bishops with their Council should take charge of and superintend all parties that take place in their Wards, and follow the example set by myself and others, in the early settlement of this Territory, and Open the Doors at one o'Clock in the Afternoon, have Prayer, and commence the Party at Two, and close with Prayer at Ten o'Clock in the Evening.

I desire you to spread these instructions on the minutes of your meeting.

Your Brother in the Gospel

Brigham Young

Monday, March 6, 1876, St. George City elections resulted in Daniel D. McArthur being elected as a member of the St. George City Council.

April 6, 1877, was a day never to be forgotten in the life of Daniel D. McArthur. On that date the General Conference of the Church was held in the St. George Temple.

The many years of labor and sacrifice to construct the Temple were at an end. This magnificent building stood as a tribute to those who worked so hard and gave so much to see its completion and the Prophet was here to dedicate the Temple to the Salvation of mankind through the Redeeming Ordinances of the Gospel.

The blessings bestowed in the Dedicatory Prayer by Wilford Woodruff would long be remembered. After the prayer the congregation were requested to remain seated while President Brigham Young, the members of the Twelve Apostles and a few others, including Daniel D. McArthur, repaired to the Sealing Room. Those present sang "Come Let Us Anew" and Apostle Brigham Young Jun. offered an eloquent prayer of blessing and thanksgiving for the Temple, its purpose and those who will use the building in perfecting the saints.

Brigham Young this same day delivered to Daniel D. the surprise he had earlier promised. A call to serve in England on a mission.

The dedication of the St. George Temple opened the way for Daniel D. to carry out one of the great ambitions of his life. He now could do temple work for his many ancestors whose genealogy he had so diligently collected during his lifetime.

While on missions to Scotland and England, he had accumulated hundreds of names of McArthurs who had lived in that part of the world. In America he had corresponded with relatives and friends and received a wealth of family information that he used in doing ordinance work in the St. George Temple. The McArthur family completed thousands of vicarious ordinances during the years immediately following the Temple dedication.

At the conference of the Latter-day Saints held in the Temple of our God commencing at ten o'clock on April 6, 1877, in the City of St. George, D. D. McArthur was called to go on a mission to Europe. By May 29th son Andrew, and his wife Addy, had taken missionary D. D. to the Utah Southern Railroad called York Station. Andrew and Addy then received a load of merchandise and returned to St. George.

D. D. remained in the Salt Lake City area for a few days and was set apart for his mission by Elder Orson Pratt June 4, 1877. He traveled by rail to N. Y. where he went on board the steamship 'Montana' of the Guyon Line and landed in Liverpool 22nd at 10 o'clock A.M., all well and happy.

He enjoyed this mission very much visiting with the saints and making contact with as many gentiles as possible. Visiting places and things of interest; once again opening his eyes to the world outside his chosen Utah.

Letters from home were gladly received and he always took time to note in his diary how glad he was to know that the families were well and getting along fine. He was always grateful to the boys and others who took care of affairs while he was away from home.

One incident of particular interest was a meeting where many strangers were present. Some of them professed to be teachers of religion and they asked many questions concerning the scriptures. D. D.'s remark was to the effect that, "they admitted that I stayed within the scriptures and they soon saw that the oftener they opened their mouths, the worse it was for them."

Special note was made of two baptisms. "After the meetings were over, we retired to Brother Isiah's, took supper and half past eleven o'clock night we went a distance of one

mile to the waters edge and attended to the rebaptism of Bro. Isiah Fletcher and to the first baptism of his wife; Bro. A. A. Kimball being the one who officiated. We then returned back to the house and tended to the confirmations, it now being about two o'clock in the morning of the first day of July, 1878."

"Visited with a people by the name of Peter Falkner. We had a good time with them. Took supper with them, returned to Bro. Starky's and at twelve o'clock in the night we went with Bro. Starky, his wife and son, to some water, a distance of one mile, and there Bro. Kimball re-baptised Bro. and sister Starky and baptised the son for the first time. We then returned back to the house and tended to the confirmations, then went to bed it being about two o'clock in the morning."

The search for ancestors never ceased. Elder McArthur took time to go to the Glasgow Cathedral Mcropolis Cemetery and the West Park Museum. "I got quite a few names of McArthurs from the Tomb Stones."

Returning home, D. D. acted as first counselor to Elder Henry W. Naisbitt in leading a company of saints home to Zion. They arrived in Salt Lake City October 3, 1878.

March 20, 1881, Daniel D. was set apart as second counselor to President John D. T. McAllister, president of the St. George Stake of Zion. D. D. served in this capacity until September 26, 1888, when he was unanimously chosen by the Council of the Apostles to become President of the St. George Stake and set apart by Apostle John Taylor to that position December 17, 1888.

Much time was spent in visiting saints throughout the area. Locating roads, approving reservoir locations, working with various governmental agencies, settling disputes with Indians and in general, keeping things 'first-rate.'



Bro. McArthur received a Medal of Honor as a result of his involvement in the various Indian wars and was delighted to see an end to the Walker, Ute and Navajo raids against the settlers in this Dixie area.

As a result of Federal legislations passed, President McArthur became subject to the persecution during the anti-polygamy raids. President Young had promised President McArthur that he would never spend any time in jail for the plural wives he had, provided that he did not deny the principal, did not disown his families, kept the commandments, and kept his families together.

Communication systems kept D. D. advised when the Feds were coming into the St. George area and as a result he was able to avoid arrest for some six years. Wilford McArthur told of going to bed in the McArthur house at night and awakening the next morning in the house of a neighbor or friend some place in the St. George valley. He also remembered of the Federal Agents being told that his mother was the daughter of one of the older wives and he, Wilford, was a grandson of Daniel D. It was not unusual for D. D. to go into hiding during the raids, and in general, avoid being found.

In April of 1890, the officers succeeded in finding President McArthur and transported him to Beaver City for trial. The judge asked a few questions:

Do you have more than one wife?

Yes.

Do you intend to continue living with your wives and families?

Yes.

Will you denounce the law of Plural Marriage?

No.

By this time, the judge was rather upset and fined Daniel D. \$321.00 for unlawful cohabitation, and dismissed the case. He failed to impose any jail sentence. In keeping with President Young's promise, no time was spent in jail and the families continued to live in the Big Red Rock House unmolested.

May 1899 was a time of excitement in the McArthur house. President Lorenzo Snow and company were coming to St. George. President Snow said that he "knew not why" but he had to make the trip. Preparations were made at the McArthur house to make the Prophet as comfortable as possible. Buggies were readied and Meeks and Moroni went to Modena to receive the party and bring them to St. George. Family stories tell of a buggy race that the boys wanted to have on the way to St. George. Some of the President's party believed such action to be inappropriate with the Prophet of the Church. To say the least, the race did not occur.

President Snow arrived in St. George and retired for the night. During the early evening hours, as the story is related in the story section of this presentation, a revelation was received by President Snow and he was told the reason for his visit to St. George. The revelation resulted in restating the law of tithing, which resulted in the financial independence of the Church.

By the year 1901, Brother McArthur had almost totally lost his eyesight and on June 14, 1901, he was honorably released from the presidency of the St. George Stake and ordained a Patriarch to the Church, a position which he held until the time of his death.

Patriarch McArthur always proclaimed his strong testimony of the gospel and wanted all to know of his knowledge of the truthfulness of the gospel and that "God has in these last days spoken from the heavens and organized His Church through the instrumentality of the Prophet, Joseph Smith. He has also spoken through his (Joseph's) successors until the present time; and to God and the Lamb be all praise forever. Amen."

Daniel Duncan McArthur filed his 'Last Will and Testament' with the Court on the first day of December, A. D. 1906.

He died at his home, 170 West Tabernacle, St. George, Utah, June 3rd, 1908.

His funeral was well attended. Some who were present said that the Tabernacle was full to capacity. The steps leading up to the entrance doors were crowded and the grounds in front of the Tabernacle were filled with those wishing to pay their last respects to this great Mormon pioneer.

**LAST WILL**  
**and**  
**TESTAMENT**

Will of Daniel D. McArthur

Filed in Fifth Judicial District Court  
Washington County, Utah  
July 1, 1908  
John T. Woodbury, Clerk

Recorded: August 29, 1908  
In Book: Records of Wills Page: 69  
Of Records of  
Fifth Judicial District Court  
John T. Woodbury, Clerk

I, Daniel D. McArthur, of the City of St. George, County of Washington, State of Utah, being at the date of this Will in the Eighty seventh year of my age, - Do make this, my last Will and Testament, in the manner following: That is to say: - I order and direct that all my just debts shall be paid with convenient Speed.

And to my wife, Matilda Caroline Fuller McArthur, in lieu of Dower, or other legal rights, outside of the provisions of this Will, I give and bequeath the whole amount of the simple interest which shall have accrued on the payments made by me, and deposited in, the Zion's Savings Bank of Salt Lake City, Utah. At the death of my wife Matilda Caroline Fuller McArthur, the sum of One hundred dollars is hereby bequeathed to my daughter, Miranda McArthur McMullen, to be paid out of the amount of the deposits to my credit in said Zion's Savings Bank; in the event of the death of my said daughter Miranda, the amount shall be paid to her heirs.

Further: the balance of the principal remaining in the Bank at my death shall be divided into Three parts: one of the parts to be transferred to my wife Matilda Caroline

Fuller McArthur, or, in the event of her death, to her heir or heirs; one of said parts to be transferred to my wife Elizabeth Bullock McArthur, if living, if dead, then to her heirs; and the remaining one part, to my wife, Mary Calloway McArthur, if living, if dead, then to be divided in equal parts among her youngest children, to wit; Wilford, Arthur and Ellen, or, their respective heirs.

As I have bequeathed the whole amount of the simple interest which shall have accrued on the payments made by me and deposited in Zion's Savings Bank, to my wife Matilda Caroline, I now direct that my Capital Stock in St. George Co-operative Mercantile Institution, and in Rio Virgen Manufacturing Company, be divided into two equal parts, one of said parts to go to my wife Elizabeth, and at her death to her children; and the other part to go to my wife Mary, and at her death, to her children.

It is my will, and, I order and direct, that my wife Matilda Caroline shall have one Cow out of horned Stock which I possess, for her own exclusive use.

I further order and direct that any real estate in the A. Sullivan Entry in the Washington Field, consisting of part of Lots Three Four, Five, (3, 4, 5.), in Block Two (2), Section Thirty four (34), Township Forty-two (42) and Range Fifteen (15) West, containing Eleven and a quarter (11 1/4 ) Acres, more or less, to my wife Matilda Caroline, or, in the event of her death, to her heir or heirs.

It is my will that my other Real Estate, and Personal property - as, household effects horses, cattle, wagons, and the like, be kept intact, for the joint benefit of my wives: - Matilda Caroline, Elizabeth and Marry and their respective minor, or unmarried children until the death of my last surviving wife.

Provided: That in the event of my wives, or any of them, desiring to sell, or otherwise dispose of the Family Home, or any part of it, consisting of Lots Two, Three and South half of Lot Four, (2,3, S 1/2 4) Block Twenty four (24) Plat A, St. George City Survey, with the Improvements thereon; I hereby appoint my said wives: Matilda Caroline, Elizabeth and Mary and their respective eldest sons, - to wit: Edward Meeks McArthur, James McArthur and Duncan McArthur, to decide by majority voice, or vote, as to said disposal, by sale, by lease, by rental, or otherwise. Provided further: That, in the event of the death of any of these six - no successor shall be chosen, but the majority vote of the survivors shall decide the matter at issue. Any proceeds from sale, lease, or, rental of my homestead property shall be equally divided among my surviving wives, and, after the death of my last surviving wife, to be divided equally among my heirs.

At the death of my last surviving wife, I devise my Real Estate in my Entry in the Santa Clara Field, consisting of Lots two, three, seven, eight, nine, (2, 3, 7, 8, 9) in Blocks two and three ( 2, 3.) Sec. Thirty-five (35), Township Forty-two (42) Range Sixteen (16), West, containing Twenty-two and 114/160 (22 114/160) - Acres, to my sons Wilford and Arthur, - one half to each.

I hereby decide and order that in the event of either of my aforesaid wives marrying after my death, that such wife shall not have any right whatever to give to her husband the use of my homestead; or any part of it.

At the death of my last surviving wife, I further Devise and Bequeath all my property, Real and Personal, not hereinbefore distributed, to be equally distributed between my children: Edward Meeks McArthur, James McArthur, Eugenia McArthur Coates, Isabelle McArthur Bunker, Duncan McArthur, Moroni McArthur, Miranda McArthur McMullen, Wilford McArthur, Arthur McArthur and Ellen McArthur, or, in the event of the death of either of them,

then, the share of such deceased child shall go to his, or, her, respective heirs.

Now: I hereby appoint as my Executors of this my last Will and Testament, David H. Cannon and Edward Meeks McArthur, to serve without Bonds.

In Witness whereof, I sign, seal and publish, and declare that this is my Will at St. George City in the County of Washington and State of Utah this First day of December, in the year of Our Lord 1906.

L. S.

Daniel D. McArthur

We, the undersigned, hereby Certify that the said Daniel D. McArthur, of the City of St. George, County of Washington, State of Utah, on the first day of December, A. D. 1906 signed by stamp (he being blind) and caused seal, by scroll, to be affixed, and declared to us that the same was his last Will and Testament; And We, at his request, and in his presence and in the presence of each other, hereunto write our names as subscribing Witnesses.

David R. Forsha  
John T. Woodbury

IN THE DISTRICT COURT OF THE FIFTH JUDICIAL DISTRICT,  
WASHINGTON COUNTY, STATE OF UTAH.

In the matter of the Estate of  
Daniel D. McArthur, Deceased.

Now comes David H. Cannon and Edward M. McArthur, executors of the last will and testament of Daniel D. McArthur, deceased, and respectfully present this their first and final account of their administration of the estate of said decedent, and show as follows:

They charge themselves with the money on hand at the time of the death of said decedent,	\$71,35,
Money received for old harness,	10,00,
Money on deposit in Zion's Savings Bank, at Salt Lake City,	\$1159,57,
Other personal property as per inventory,	\$775,29,
Real estate as per inventory,	<u>\$3128,40.</u>
Total,	\$5144,61,

And they claim credit for the following disbursements, by cash paid as follows:

Funeral Expenses,	
Casket,	\$30,00,
Sexton' fees,	4,00,
Clothing,	7,35,
Telegrams,	<u>3,00.</u>
	\$44,35,
Service of Stallion	8,00,
Court expenses	23,80,

Taxes,	79,44,
Attorney's fees,	<u>15,00.</u>
Total disbursements,	\$170,59.

Recapitulation.	
To total received,	\$5144,61,
By disbursements,	<u>170,59.</u>
Balance on hand,	\$4974,02,

State of Utah,       ss.  
County of Washington

David H. Cannon and Edward M. McArthur, being first duly sworn, each for himself, says: I am an Executor of the estate of Daniel D. McArthur, deceased. The foregoing account, this day filed by us as and for the first and final account of our administration of said estate, is in all respects just and true, and according to the best of my knowledge, information and belief, contains a full, true, and particular account of all our receipts and disbursements on account of said estate, from the commencement of our administration, to the 28th day of December, 1908, and of all sums of money belonging to the said estate which have come into our hands as such executors, or which have been received by any other person by our order or authority for our use; and of all claims presented and allowed or paid and I do not know of any error or omission in such account to the prejudice of any person interested in said estate. I further state that the items of expenditure not exceeding twenty dollars, for which no vouchers are annexed or produced, have actually been paid by us, as stated in said account to have been made respectively; and that said account exhibits not only the debts which have been paid, but also a statement of all debts which have been duly presented and allowed during the period embraced in said account.

David H. Cannon  
Edward M. McArthur

**STORIES**

**and**

**QUOTES**

### Short Sketch on the life of Mary Francis Calloway McArthur

As told to Lola H. McArthur by Mary's son, Wilford W. McArthur, and his wife Leah, and Moroni McArthur, son of Elizabeth Bullock McArthur.

Three wives of Daniel D. McArthur, Elizabeth Bullock, Caroline Fuller, Mary Francis Calloway, and their children, and Ran, the child of Mary Hill, who died when her child was born, all lived together in a large red rock house on about 170 West Tabernacle Street, St. George, Utah.

There was perfect harmony among the wives and children, but they seldom mentioned the wife, Caroline Fuller, but always spoke only of Mary Francis and Elizabeth Bullock. Wilford says some people thought it would be awful to be raised in a polygamist home, but he thought it was wonderful, because he had two mothers instead of one. All children were equally obedient to either mother who asked them to do anything. They never dared to disobey.

Mary Francis was born 31 January, 1854, at Little Cottonwood, Utah. Not much is known about her childhood. She had very little schooling and had hardly any courtship.

Daniel D. probably met the young girl as he made his trips around the Stake. The boundaries of which ran out into Nevada, down to the Muddy Valley, up to Rockville and New Harmony. All trips were made by team and buggy. As the story goes -- Mary Francis had a date to attend a party with a Mr. Chidester. D. D. McArthur came to their home the day of the party, had a long talk with Mary Francis' father, after which, her father called her and told her she was to go to the party with Brother McArthur. She did and married him soon after, in March or April 10, 1871, at the age of seventeen, he being 34 years older than she. She

was his fifth wife. And all arrangements were made between her father and Daniel D. She had no choice in the matter. She came to St. George and moved in with the other wives.

Their city property was 2 1/2 city lots with 2 1/2 shares of water; the soil was rich and black and everything they ate was raised on this property. They had a good vineyard, apple and pear trees and a very good garden. Many of the grapes, apples, and pears were bottled and dried for winter use and many varieties of vegetables, potatoes, carrots, beets, and cabbage were used fresh and stored in a pit for use in winter.

They had a farm where wheat and alfalfa were raised. They had flour made from part of the wheat and the rest was fed to the chickens, pigs, cattle, and horses. Wilford said he never remembers of his father selling a sack of wheat or a load of hay.

They always had plenty of beef, about four were killed and cured each year; corned beef was made. They used much pork also, curing the ham and shoulder in the old fashioned smoke house, and using part of it fresh. They always had plenty of eggs, and killed many chickens to use on the table.

Mary Francis always got up early, made a fire in the kitchen stove and prepared breakfast, which consisted of hot biscuits every morning, eggs, sausage (of their own make) potatoes and milk gravy or gravy made from bacon grease and milk.

Elizabeth always milked the cows and took care of the milk and butter, which they made themselves.

After breakfast Mary Francis would go up stairs to her weaving room. At first receiving only a bit a yard, 12 1/2 cents. Later she got 15 cents and 20 cents a yard. The money she received for weaving was the only cash the



family ever had. She was very fast at weaving and often wove 15 to 20 yards a day. The boys, Wilford, Duncan and Moroni, had to wind the shuttles every night before going to bed, and if she had quite a lot of weaving to do, they had to refill the shuttle again during the day to keep her busy, so she wouldn't have to stop to wind the shuttles. They said many mornings she started weaving at 4 and 5 a.m.

Mary Francis did all the shopping for the materials to be made into clothing. Moroni says he never remembers of his mother, Elizabeth, doing any shopping. Maybe they decided Mary Francis should have the pleasure of spending the money since she was the one who earned it weaving.

The clothing for the entire family was made in the home. Elizabeth, her daughter Eugene, and Mary Francis, were all excellent seamstresses and did the sewing. They also made crocheted hats from carpet warp for the boys. After they were starched and pressed a wire was laced through the brim to help hold their shape. When the hats became dirty, the wire was removed, the hats were washed, starched and pressed, and the wire replaced. Wilford and Moroni both remember wearing those hats until they were fourteen or fifteen years old. Ladies hats were made by weaving straw and sewing it into hats; felt hats were also made and blocked in their home.

Mary Francis was a very small woman. She usually weighed around ninety pounds. She was very quick, never seemed to hurry, but when she moved, every move counted, and she accomplished much. One grandson, Roy Anderson, said, "The two things I remember about her were her small feet, she wore size 3 shoes, and her handwork. She always was busy doing something, especially crocheting." I might add, she gave me, Lola H. McArthur, one of her lovely crocheted doilies when I married Arnold, her grandson. She loved children and treated all children kindly, the neighbor children as well as her own.

A granddaughter, Ramona Anderson Prisbey, said the thing she remembers about grandmother was her sense of humor. She could always see the funny side of a situation and enjoy laughing over it. She also remembers her grandmother taking them to the store to buy them shoes.

Mary Francis very seldom helped with the noon meal, because of her weaving, but she loved to bake especially pies and layer cream cake. The baking was always done on Saturday for Sunday dinner. Mary had just made the cakes and put one together. Wilford asked for a piece, his mother refused, but Elizabeth said, "Why don't you give him a piece? There'll still be plenty." So Mary gave him a piece. He ate it and asked for more, his mother said it would make him sick. Again Elizabeth interceded and he was given a second helping. That night he became very ill, cause, too much layer cream cake. He says he has never eaten any since that time.

They ate only two meals on Sunday; breakfast and then dinner right after church. If they didn't go right home to eat they didn't get any dinner. Duncan usually missed his dinner, so his mother, Mary, saved him a piece of pie, which she put on a small plate and turned a pan over the top of it. Moroni came home earlier than Duncan, discovered the pie and ate it. This went on week after week for months. One day they had a new kind of pie, kind of special, Moroni got that piece also. The next morning Mary asked Duncan how he liked the new pie; he asked, "What pie? I didn't get any pie." Mary said, "Moroni did you eat that pie?" He admitted he had and upon further questioning it was found out that he had eaten Duncan's piece of pie for months. After that Mary put Duncan's piece of pie in her bedroom so Moroni wouldn't get it.

Two ladies from Santa Clara, Ann and Rose Ann Ensign, had a standing invitation to eat at the Daniel D. McArthur home every conference Sunday, regardless of who else was there. They always drove over in a one seated black top buggy

with some hay in the back for their horse. Wilford said they would never let the boys help harness or unharness the horse or give it any hay except what they brought over.

One Sunday after the meal was finished but everyone was still seated around the table, Ann came around the table and put her hands on Wilford's shoulders and said, "Wilford, you are too small to be a farmer and do heavy work, some day you will be cashier of a bank." Sort of a prophecy I'd say, as Wilford was just a young boy 12 or 13 years old, and we all know he was cashier of the Bank of St. George for many years.

After the Manifesto in 1890, the polygamist families of the church lived in an atmosphere of tension and suspense. The U. S. Marshalls were always hunting down any man who had more than one wife. They came any time, day or night, and tried to catch the offenders. Wilford remembers one night when they got word the marshalls were on their way. Elizabeth took Wilford in her arms and fled up through the block, which was thick with weeds and grease wood and carried him to Lucy B. Young's home, then owned by Robert Lund and they spent the night there until the marshalls had left town.

Another time when Wilford was about 6 years old he was sleeping with his sister Sybil in a corner bed and a U. S. Marshall and Aunt Elizabeth came into the room with a light and stood over their bed. The marshall asked who is the girl. Aunt Elizabeth said it was a neighbor's girl. He then asked who the other child was and Aunt Caroline said it was her sister's child.

Another time when they were raided Mary picked Ellen up, put her in her large apron like a load of wood and hurried through the block to the Robert Lund home, where she stayed all night.

The marshalls had promised Daniel D. they would never take him on his own premises, but one day right after lunch they came dashing in. One child who was sitting on the floor in one room was booted in the back and told to get in the other room where they were trying to get children of the different wives rounded up. Mary ran from the house to the wagon shed to hide, but one marshall who had stayed out in the street saw her and she was brought back. This was the time that D. D. was caught for polygamy.

D. D. had been promised in hi patriarchal blessing that no hair of his head would ever be touched by an enemy. After D. D. was put under arrest, and the trial was to be in Beaver, David Cannon was talking with Daniel D. and said, "If I was as sure of my salvation as you are of having your hair cut, I wouldn't have to worry." The hair cut was always part of the sentence when convicted of polygamy and imprisoned.

When it came time for Daniel D. to leave for the trial, Anthony W. Ivins accompanied him to Beaver. (Brother Ivins was one of D. D.'s councilors in the St. George Stake Presidency at the time). They both carried quite a bit of money with them. In court D. D. was asked, "How many illegitimate children do you have?" "One," answered D. D. (An illegitimate child was one born after the Manifesto 1890). Ellen was that child. "Will you abandon those two illegitimate wives?" "No your honor, I married those wives in good faith, and I do not propose to abandon them"

The judge said, "Then I'll fine you \$100 for each of those two illegitimate wives and \$50 for that illegitimate child." Before he could finish the statement for the jail sentence. D. D. McArthur and Brother Ivins opened their purses and put the \$250 on the table, and the judge didn't get the chance to finish the sentence. Daniel D. and Brother Ivins laughed about it many times on their way home and D. D. didn't get the hair cut.

Daniel D. died June 3, 1908. Mary Francis was the only wife left, so her youngest daughter, Ellen, stayed on and lived in the old home when she married Hans Anderson. All their children were born in the old D. D. McArthur home and they lived there until the death of Mary Francis, December 30, 1928.

Mary Francis Calloway had six children; two girls, Sybil and Ellen and four boys; Duncan, Levi (who died at 3 years of age), Wilford W. and Arthur; Wilford W. being the only survivor at this time.

\* \* \* \* \*

Mary Francis Calloway McArthur died 31 December 1928 at the home of her son, Wilford Woodruff McArthur and left with Wilford journals and other items of interest.

The watch fob, which a moonstone on one side and a bloodstone on the other side was one of the artifacts left with Wilford.

This watch fob has been in the family since the days of the Prophet in Nauvoo, Illinois.

Daniel D. McArthur owned a beautiful black horse, of which he was justly proud and the Prophet Joseph Smith was justly envious. At some point in time the Prophet Joseph and Daniel D. engaged in a conversation concerning the black horse and what price Brother McArthur would require for the horse. Brother McArthur told Brother Joseph that he would trade 'straight across' for the watch fob. We are not privileged to know the conversation, but after a time, the trade was made.

At a routine visit to the Church Historians office, letters and the 'fob' were presented for verification. We were

advised that letters presented at this time should be held by the historian for age dating; that the fob contained samples of the 'fake seer stones' said to be around during the time of the translation of the Book of Mormon. The historian suggested that the Church Archivist at the museum would be most interested in the 'fob' and story associated with it.

To confirm the story the 'fob' was taken to the Church Archivist in Salt Lake City with a request that he confirm the story and all other information available concerning the transaction.

After consulting with specialists and experts available in the Salt Lake area, the archivist advised that the gold was indeed 24 carat, or rose gold, that would date back about 150 years and the stones were like those found in New York state. We were also advised that the story concerning the artifact should be used as part of the family history of the Daniel D. McArthur family.

In the event the family was willing to leave the 'fob' with the Archivist, it would be placed on permanent display as one of the prize artifacts of the Church.

A decision was made at that time to retain the watch fob in possession of the Daniel D. McArthur family.

submitted by Rudger M. McArthur

\* \* \* \* \*

I was helping Edward F. Nisson lay the rock corners on the Howard A. Morris home at 81 Diagonal Street in St. George, when Brother Nisson said, "I want to tell you a story about your grandfather, Daniel D. McArthur."

Edward F. lived in Washington and always came with his family to attend conference in the St. George Stake Tabernacle. Children were soon separated from parents and would not see them again until after the meeting. Parents wanted a full report from the children to make certain that they in fact did attend the Conference Session.

The boys would stay in the tabernacle until after the opening hymn and prayer. At that time they would adjourn to a fig orchard across the street to the north and play cards during the meeting. The signal to return to the Tabernacle was when Stake President Daniel D. McArthur stood at the pulpit, loudly proclaimed the principles of the gospel and pounded the pulpit with his cane. The boys made it back to the Tabernacle for the closing hymn and prayer.

Parents were satisfied with the meeting report and the boys enjoyed the time in what they considered a most appropriate manner.

submitted by Rudger M. McArthur

\* \* \* \* \*

Wine paid for tithing in St. George was stored in the cellar of Daniel D. McArthur's red rock house. The word around St. George was that Wilford and his brother, Arthur, had been assigned the chore of testing the wine on a regular basis to make sure that it had not turned to vinegar and was suitable for sacrament wine in the Tabernacle.

submitted by Rudger M. McArthur

\* \* \* \* \*

John Schmutz, who knew the McArthur family well, was asked what he remembered about D. D. He advised that Brother McArthur was a very clean and proper person. He was of the firm opinion and very stern but not quite as much that way as his grandson, Rudger M. McArthur. He remembered that President McArthur always kept a buggy and a matched team of horses ready to make the trip to build the new Jerusalem.

submitted by Rudger M. McArthur

\* \* \* \* \*

Bessie McArthur Gardner was commenting about Daniel D. McArthur and observed that she had been in the house with Grandfather and was very impressed with the fact that he was a neat, well dressed person who always came to the dinner table wearing a white shirt and tie.

Submitted by Rudger M. McArthur

\* \* \* \* \*

INDIANS BAPTIZED  
(Millennial Star - April 19, 1875)

St. George, Utah  
March 20, 1875

Editor Salt Lake Herald:

. . . The next marvel was the arrival, last night, of about 200 Shebit Indians, who came and demanded baptism -- the result of some supernatural influence through their prophets and 'medicine man', similar to like

demonstrations in other parts of the Territory. Early this morning a large concourse of red and white people were gathered around the pool on Mt. Hope. -- Savage, of course, with his photographic instrument, was present and took several views. Several persons were appointed to administer, and after singing and prayer, nearly 200 of the dusky denizens of the forest, -- men, women, and children -- went down into the water and were baptized, after which, food to sustain them for the time they remained was donated and collected by the citizens.

According to Historian James G. Bleak's records, 163 Indians were baptized on Friday, March 19th, Saturday, March 20th and Tuesday, March 23rd, 1875; and 27 children were blessed on the 20th and 23rd, respectively. He reported that practically the entire tribe were baptized at that time.

Those persons who did the baptizing were: Daniel D. McArthur, David H. Cannon, Josiah G. Hardy, and William Fawcett.

In the picture we have can be seen Daniel D. McArthur, at the left, baptizing old 'Katoose', a chief. Augustus Poor Hardy is standing on the bank at the right of the picture.

As stated, when the Indians were baptized they were each given a set of clothes and some food. Therefore, the Indians connected this baptism with food and clothing instead of eternal salvation and for many years they requested to be baptized again in order that they could receive more food and clothing.

submitted by Nellie Gubler

\* \* \* \* \*

#### Katoose Punished for Stealing Corn

When Daniel D. was Stake President, of course he attended Sacrament Meeting every Sunday at 2:00 p.m. When his corn crop in the fields was ripe he noted that at the time he was at Church, someone was raiding his corn patch. Therefore, he got excused from meeting and rode to the field. He could hear someone coming up through the cornfield, so he kept quiet until he could see that it was Katoose, putting the ears of corn into the sack he was dragging along. Grandpa quietly went to the edge of the field and cut a nice little willow. He quietly made his way back to where the Indian was plucking the ears of corn and very unexpectedly struck Katoose across the back several times. Then he asked, "Why are you stealing my corn?" Katoose said he was hungry. Grandpa told him if he was hungry to come to his house up in town and tell him and he would give him food, but he wasn't supposed to steal. He then made Katoose take the corn to town and then gave him some to take to his wickiup. Apparently the message was put across, because the stealing stopped.

My father told me this story many times - Nellie Gubler

\* \* \* \* \*

#### Dunck and Rone Steal Flags

One fourth of July, my father (Rone) and his brother Duncan (Dunck) were sent to the Post Office to get the mail. Dunck was almost two years older than Rone, yet both were still young lads.

At this time the Post Office was in connection with Pymn's store, a half a block east of where the Tabernacle stands. The boys saw a container in the store that was full of flags. They each wanted one but had not money with them to

purchase one, so they decided between themselves that when Dunck had Brother Pymn busy getting their mail that Rone would take a flag for each of them, because many of their friends owned flags. This was accomplished and the boys went merrily on their way home, waving their flags. Their home was a block and a half west of the Tabernacle and on the north side of the street.

Upon arrival at home, Dunck's mother (Aunt Mary) and Elizabeth (Rone's mother) demanded to know where they got the flags. They answered, "At Pymn's store." "But," said the women, "You did not have any money so how come Brother Pymn gave you flags?" "He didn't give them to us. We just took them while he was getting the mail." At this Aunt Mary exclaimed, "You little thieves! You are going right back there and return those flags and tell Brother Pymn what you did and that you are sorry." To enforce her command she walked outside and plucked a little switch from the very convenient tamarisk bush near the house and proceeded to march them right back so that all the people along the way could see what was happening to President McArthur's sons. The boys gave the flags back to Brother Pymn and Aunt Mary said, "Here are the little thieves. Put them in jail or give them a licking, or do whatever you want to do with them!"

Brother Pymn said, "Boys, come with me." He took them to the long back porch and had them sit beside him as he told them how wrong it was to steal. Dad would say, as he told us about it at various times, "I got the worst lickin' I ever had in my life. Brother Pymn put his arm around us as he told us what a sin it was to take something that did not belong to us. He said, "If you want something and do not have the money to buy it, ask me for it and I will give it to you instead of you having to steal it." Dad said if Brother Pymn had given them a good whipping it would not have hurt so badly as it did for him to put his arm around them and talk to them kindly. He said he was never tempted to

take things that did not belong to him after that. He was an honest man and tried to teach his children to be the same.

submitted by Nellie M. Gubler

\* \* \* \* \*

#### Moroni Takes A Message To President Woodruff

when Grandpa was the Stake President, he needed to send a message to President Woodruff, who was hiding from Armstrong and McGeary, the two federal officers who often made raids on the polygamists in the area. It was known that President Woodruff was at that time living in the home of Emma and John Squires at about 700 East, on the north side of what is now known as the 'Boulevard'. This was about a mile and a half from the McArthur home. The most used method of travel at the time was 'Shank's Pony', or in other words, walking. Daniel D. sent his son, Moroni, with a letter for President Snow.

When he reached the Squires' home he asked Em (as she was called) where President Woodruff was. Em said he was 'around back' and pointed toward the Red Hill. Moroni went back there but the only person he could see was an old lady hoeing in the garden. He asked her if she knew where President Woodruff was. She turned to look at him and it was then that Moroni recognized that the old lady was President Woodruff, clothed in a long dress and wearing a sunbonnet. Moroni delivered the letter and then waited till he got a message for his father.

\* \* \* \* \*

## The Polygamy Raids

The federal officers (or Feds, as they were called) were Jim McGeary and Johnny Armstrong. They made raids quite often in the St. George area. Daniel D. hid out and evaded them for six years. He had a room rented at a neighbor's home a block or so north of his red rock home and would go there when the officers were looking for him. My father, Moroni, said he well remembers of going to sleep at home and awaking at the neighbor's in the morning. He, being one of the younger children, was carried there in his sleep to get away from the Feds.

These officers always traveled in the same little one-seated, black-topped buggy and had to stop at Silver Reef for rest and feed for their horses. One thing was certain. Every polygamist in the area was warned before they got to St. George. The trip from Silver Reef would take four or five hours. As soon as they drove into Silver Reef the boy at the telegraph office would wire to the one in the St. George station at the Tithing Office and say, "Send me up two chairs." Which meant that there were two officers on the way down. Or if there was another man on horseback, as there often was, the message would be fore three chairs.

Grandpa said he evaded the officers for six years and finally they sent him a message that if he would stay on his own property they would not bother him, so he accepted their word and they came and arrested him. He had to go to Beaver to court. Anthony W. Ivins took him up there. His patriarchal blessing had said that "not a hair of his head would be touched by his enemies." Yet, if convicted, it meant that he would go to jail in Salt Lake and have his head shaved. The morning that he and Brother Ivins left, people were lined up along the street to witness their beloved President going on trial. Some said, "Now your hair will be touched."

In court he pleaded guilty. The judge told him that if he would denounce all but the one wife he would not have to go to jail. He said he would not do that since when they were married it was in good faith that he would be true to them. Besides, the children belonged to him and he would not denounce them. So the judge meant to give him 'the full extent of the law' -- which was that he would go to jail and have his hair shaved off. He said, "I fine you" and paused, "I fine you," another pause, "I fine you," a third pause, and then, "\$250." President Ivins planked down the money and the case was ended. The judge said, "That was the strangest thing! I was trying to say, "I fine you the full extent of the law," but I couldn't say it:"

Therefore his Patriarchal Blessing came true and he and Brother Ivins went home.

submitted by Nellie Gubler

\* \* \* \* \*

D. D. recalls: "before being driven out of Kirtland, we were all rounded up and placed in a stockade. Us young bucks were forced to run the gauntlet, but when I went down the plank - although I was lashed with a blacksnake whip - I threw my hat in the air and yelled "Whoopee." The fellow who used the whip said, "Yes, we can whip you, but we can't conquer you."

Although only 18 years old, I was made captain of a company when the saints left Missouri in 1838, in a company of five hundred and fifty souls.

I was called to be a home missionary through the great reformation of 1856 and 1857.

In the spring of 1857, I was called to go back to Devil's Gate on the Sweetwater, to bring up those of the emigrants of 1856, and who had started out too late and who had been snowbound and who had suffered terrible privations as the result of hunger, cold and attacks by Indians.

In the fall of 1857, I was chosen to be a major over a battalion and was ready for duty as soon as possible. At that time we were ordered to march to Echo Canyon to help stop Colonel Johnston, which I did. We were in the mountains most of the winter of 1857 and 1858.

submitted by Nellie Gubler

\* \* \* \* \*

A story from Daniel D. McArthur's family about an incident involving two of his sons - probably about the time they were entering their teens. Moroni (Rone) was the son of Elizabeth Bullock, and Duncan (Dunc) was the son of Mary Calloway. I had asked dad how life was in a polygamist home environment - didn't they have problems with one another overprotecting or trying to get more for her kids - to which Dad told me this story.

#### The Last Pear

Dunc and Rone were playing together near a big pear tree by the old family home at about 170 West Tabernacle in St. George. Winter was not far off. The pears had all been picked - but one came into view near the top of the tree, so, as any normal boys would do, they started throwing sticks and rocks to knock that last pear down. After several near misses, Rone hit the limb with a rock and Dunc ran to catch the pear before Rone (not concerned about the rock, just wanted to best Rone to that pear!). Gravity brought the rock down, as well as the pear, and the rock

clobbered Dunc in the head and cut a gash. The pear didn't seem quite so important at that point in time, and Dunc ran in the house yelling that Rone had hit him with a rock. Mary, Dunc's mother, really had the hackles on her neck stand as she prepared to straighten out Rone for hitting her boy, and had nearly done just that before Rone got the message to her. He said, "Yes I did throw the rock and hit Dunc - but here's how it happened." And he explained how he'd thrown and knocked the pear down and Dunc tried to steal the pear without paying attention to the rock. She said, "Is that right Dunc?" He said, "Well, yes," Mary then spanked the bleeding Dunc for misleading her.

submitted by Thomas P. McArthur

\* \* \* \* \*

This is a story told to me by my father, Moroni McArthur, who is the youngest child of Elizabeth Bullock McArthur and Daniel D. McArthur.

Daniel D. McArthur said, "Joseph Smith taught him to lie and Brigham Young taught him to drink!"

When he was a young man he was playing marbles with a group of boys in Nauvoo. Joseph Smith came along and he said to them, "Boys, you haven't seen me and you don't know where I am." It wasn't long until some of the mobster's came along and asked if they had seen Joseph Smith. They all said they hadn't seen Joseph Smith and didn't know where he was. Even if he was just around the corner from them. They probably saved his life then.

When the Saints were driven out of Nauvoo in the winter of 1846, and the weather was bitter cold, Daniel D. McArthur had been ferrying families across the Mississippi River all day long. It was getting evening time and the cold was



getting colder and Daniel was getting tired. He told Brigham Young he would not make one more trip across the river that night. Brigham Young showed him another family on the bank waving their arms wanting to come across. Brigham said to him, "You wouldn't leave them for the mobs, would you?" He told his wife to go fix Daniel a nice hot toddy, which she did, and across the river he went.

Hence, Brigham Young taught him to drink and Joseph Smith taught him to lie.

submitted by Annie M. Jennings

\* \* \* \* \*

One Sunday in the Pine Valley chapel, after the block of meetings was completed, Sister Alice Cannon Barton came up to me and said, "I would like to tell you a story about Daniel D. McArthur. The incident happened when I was a very young girl. It is indelibly impressed on my mind and I shall never forget."

Daniel D. was blind the last few years of his life. But in spite of this condition, he still kept in touch with things around the place and in fact, kept the boys in line.

It was a sunny summer afternoon. President McArthur was sitting along side the house when he heard some children going through the yard.

Art, did you water the horses?

No reply.

Art, answer me. Did you water the horses?

Still no reply.

By this time the sound of children could no longer be heard and Brother McArthur seemed content to talk with Art about the lack of respect at a later time.

As the evening meal was being served, Grandfather McArthur knew that he had a captive audience and again talked, rather sternly, about the water of the horses.

Art, when I asked you this afternoon about watering the horses, you did not answer me. When you are asked a question, please respond.

Father, this is the first time this day that you have talked with me about watering the horses.

Art, when you went through the yard this afternoon, I asked you two or three times if you had watered the horses, and you did not answer.

I did water the horses today, but I never did walk through the yard this afternoon. This is the first time you have asked me about watering the horses.

(Sister Barton was not party to this conversation, but she later learned that Brother McArthur did not say much during the remainder of the meal.)

Later that afternoon, the children heard a tapping sound and looked down through the corrals and pens to see Brother McArthur, locating the posts and boards with his cane; and working his way slowly but surely toward the children and their house. The children retreated and the anticipated knock came at the door.

Mother answered.

Are the children in the house? I must talk with them.

What have they done this time?

Nothing serious, but I must talk with them.

They are here listening to you.

Are you the youngsters who walked through my yard this afternoon?

Yes.

Did you answer me when I talked with you?

No. You were talking to Art and we are not Art.

I have come over here to apologize to you for the way I talked to you this afternoon. It was annoying to me to think that Art would not respond to his father's question. Please forgive me. I did not intend to offend or frighten you in any way.

Mother and children accepted the apology. The children, in the presence of Brother McArthur, were told that because Brother McArthur could not see them, he thought they were some of his own children. Mother concluded the conversation by telling the youngsters always to answer Brother McArthur so he would know who he was talking to in the future.

As Brother McArthur found his way back to his house by again tapping the fence posts and boards with his cane, the children returned to the yard to play. Sister Barton said that they often talked about that afternoon and President Daniel D. McArthur.

Told by Alice Barton to Rudger M. McArthur

\* \* \* \* \*

Stories and reports of happenings that we hear make lasting impressions on our minds. One such incident was retold to me many times by my father, Wilford Woodruff McArthur. The incident had a remarkable impact on his life, as well as the lives of millions of members of the Church.

It was evident from weather conditions that the Saints in St. George were going to experience the continuation of a drought that had discouraged every one of and nearly destroyed the colony.

President Lorenzo Snow had been appraised of the situation by St. George Stake President, Daniel D. McArthur, and had been impressed to travel to St. George, for some reason which he stated was unknown to him.

Arrangements were made, the Prophet and his company were to travel to Modena by train. At that location they were to be met by representatives from the St. George Stake and travel to St. George.

Two of the teamsters at Modena when the train arrived were Moroni and Meeks, sons of President Daniel D. McArthur. The group traveled in open carriages called 'buggies' and after a long, dry, dusty trip arrived at St. George.

Preparations had been made at the McArthur house for the honored guests. New straw tick mattresses and chicken down pillows had been made and the second floor east room in the home had been made as comfortable as possible for the guests.

The front section of the old McArthur home was three stories. The lower floor, known as the cellar, stored the wine paid as tithing to the St. George Stake and kept at that location until it was used for sacrament in the Tabernacle.

The main floor was a bedroom on the east and a living room on the west part of the front of the house. The third floor was a loom room where Mary Francis Calloway had her loom and bedroom.

The room prepared for the Prophet was directly over the main floor bedroom. The main floor bedroom was occupied by Daniel D. and Mary Francis Calloway McArthur and their small children, including Wilford Woodruff McArthur. Father was impressed by the fact that President Snow's son slept at the bottom of the steps to protect his father from the enemies of the Church.

Father reports the following incident:

President Snow was very tired from the long journey, was not well and to make matters worse, he still did not know why he had come to St. George. He began to pace the floor, and father said that those in the bedroom below could hear his steps and the creaking floor boards kept the entire family awake.

The walking stopped. Everyone and everything became quiet.

How quiet?

You could not hear a sound in the house. Not even the breathing of the person next to you.

How long did the quiet last?

Just a few minutes.

Were you afraid?

No, the quiet was the most peaceful experience you can imagine. No sound, no disturbance; just perfect, quiet peace.

What interrupted the peaceful experience?

President Snow said, "I know, Lord, now why I am here."

What happened next?

The household returned to normal. The Prophet ceased walking the floor, children fussed a little, and things remained as usual until morning.

In the morning, President Snow seemed to be a different person. At last he knew what had brought him to St. George. The weariness from the long journey was no longer evident and the business of preparing to administer to the needs of the saints and preparing for upcoming meetings occupied his mind.

The film, 'The Windows of Heaven,' portrayed events connected with this trip and the revelation that was pronounced in the St. George Tabernacle.

The day the film premiered in St. George happened to be the day we buried my brother, Lloyd. We asked father if he would like to see the presentation inasmuch as he had been in the house and heard the Prophet announce, "I know, Lord, now why I am here."

I, too, had been involved in the presentation, inasmuch as Rudger M. McArthur was the piccolo player in the band marching in the original film. Members of the family joined and we enjoyed the 'Windows of Heaven.'

After the film, we were on our way home and I asked:

Dad, how did you like the film and its story?

Ah shucks, it wasn't the way they showed it at all.

The events that transpired in the home of stake president Daniel D. McArthur that night, will have a great influence on the testimonies of the descendants of Daniel D. McArthur; the financial condition of the Church and the lives of millions who gain blessings from practicing the 'Law of Tithing.'

submitted by Rudger M. McArthur

\* \* \* \* \*

The following information is taken from the journal of Daniel Duncan McArthur, starting on page sixteen and concluding on page nineteen.

I was in my eighteenth year and it was the first time that I hade Shouldered my gun and stept forth for the defence of Zion. My first exppidition out to meet the Enemy was under the command of Elder Dunham which was in the month of October and November. We expected to come in contact with the Mob but did not as they kept out of our way save two men who were with a four Hors Team they pleed their inosence and said that they had never done any thing against the Saints and wished to have the privelage of mooving their mother out of the County in peace which privlage was granted them by Captain Dunham but a Scarter man then one of them was I never Saw.

The mob got themselves a cannon and were on their way to Andiammon when they were meet by David Pattin one of the Twelve Apostles with a small Company and put to flight and David got the Cannon they thought to hide it so the Mormens could not find it but in this things they were most awfully mistaken, for the Lord was with David and his boys the Mob hid the cannon in the road thinking by riding their Horses over it they might decieve somebody, but when the Mormonon boys found that the mob hade fled in every

direction some through the corn fields and some never Stoping to ontye their halters but cut them loose and got out of sight as best they could concluded that it was best to look about and see what was left after the flight they soon some Cannon Balls and shortly a Cagg of Powder and then the Cannon Stalk Wagon and Harness and of course they expected the barel next and while looking for it there was an old Sow walking about. She went to the middle of the Road and went to Rooting the Ground up hog fashion low and behold there lay the old Barril of course the boys hade some little shouting over it when they found it. They soon loaded it up and Started for Adamondiammon and while on their way back one of the Mob came up thinking that he was entering the right crowd but found his mistake after it was to late so David thought as he was no doubt it would be right to invite him to Ride Concequently he got straddle of the Cannon and Rode into th City Baring the resemblance of a Presenor. When the Mormon Boys got into Adamondiammon it was in the dead of the night but the news soon went the rounds that the Cannon was taken from the Mob which caused them to rejoice that the Lord hade hurd their prayers so it was concluded by Joseph the Prophet and the Brethern to take the Cannon in the Morning up on a hill to the place were old father Adam Blessed his Sons and fire off a few rounds. Consequently as soon as the Sun Rose in the Morning the Saints Collected on the Spot and Cannon was preared and loaded and fired three times and evry time it was dscharged the Saints took of their hats and Shouted hosannah to God and the Lamb three times the Report was hurd twenty five Miles distinctly.

\* \* \* \* \*

The following is told by Ruth Pickett in 1955 for the Daughters of the Utah Pioneer's:

The story is told by his decedents that at one time while making this journey, he received a strong impression to cut a stout shepherd's crook from the willows growing along the streams. This seemed such an unusual and unnecessary thing for him to do that he tried to forget it. But, again he was urged to cut him a shepherd's crook. Since he had prayed continually for guidance in leading these people in safety, he decided he should listen to the promptings and cut a crook.

He knew there were no sheep along the trail and that he would be the joke of the company, but he was ready for their jokes. But he didn't have long to wait to see the purpose of the warning. As they walked along (everyone except the aged and sick), walking every mile of the way, they came to a bad bog where the wheels of the carts sank deeply into the sticky mud. Pull as they might, they couldn't pull the wheels out, for their feet would slip and mire into the black mud.

But Brother McArthur was prepared. He rode a big mule as he traveled back and forth along the line of march, and when he saw the trouble they were having he quickly hooked his stout crook into the spokes of the wheel and spurred his mule into pulling with its might. As one cart was brought thru in safety he and his mule went back to help the next one. And so he stayed until all the carts had passed the bog safely and were on their way again.

submitted by Annie M. Jennings and Grace M. Twitchell

\* \* \* \* \*

Maxwell's Ranch - January 11, 1866

Col. McArthur - The Indians have made a break on Brother Whitmore's ranch and have driven off all of his sheep on Monday night the 8th. Brother Whitmore and Brother Robert McIntire went out on the range on Monday

morning and have not been seen since; and we think they are killed.

We want help to go and drive the Indians across the Colorado, and help to find Bros' Whitmore and McIntire. The men will want fifteen or twenty day's ration.

I shall apply to Major Russell for help, but do not expect to get more than 10 or 15 men from him. There ought to be about 50 men.

(signed) Wm. B. Maxwell, Major.

On the 12th, thirty three men and three baggage wagons left St. George for Pipe Springs. At Washington the number was increased to forty-four. Col. D. D. McArthur went with his company, as did also Angus M. Cannon and John D. L. Pearce.

Pipe Springs --- 21st January 1866

Major R. Bentley: Sir: -- Since writing you last we have moved from Maxwell's Ranch to the late Brother Whitmore's place, here at Pipe Springs. We came here on the 15th and moved on the 17th to Moccassin Springs, where Head Quarters were established.

On the 18th, a scouting party from Capt. Andrus' command took two prisoners while in the act of killing a beef. They were brought in, and on the 19th, examined but nothing of importance could be obtained. Neither threatenings nor promise availed anything, and although a rope was thrown across a beam, and they were told that unless they told the truth they would be hanged, they still persisted in declaring ignorance of what had been done. But, one said he had a dream that Navajos had been here. He gave information of a small band of Indians camped about ten miles out. A party was sent after them, who found they had

moved camp about 5 miles farther. They were overtaken at sunrise on the 20th. Two Indians were killed and five captured.

Whilst this party was out, the Indian in camp was induced to confess his knowledge of the death and whereabouts of the bodies of Brothers Whitmore and McIntire. He went with a small party and showed the place where they lay. A wagon was sent out, and whilst those with the wagons were taking up the bodies, the five prisoners were brought up to the place, in charge of eleven men. Some money, fresh sheepskins and a few other things, which stood as evidence against them of their guilt. This meeting was too much for the brethren to stand so they turned the prisoners loose and shot them on the ground where the murdered bodies lay. Thus did retribution overtake them on the scene of their crime. This makes seven Indians killed. We have one prisoner in the camp from whom we hope to get more information.

We have heard of a large band of Indians, camped on the Pahreah, and as soon as our supplies come up, we shall march on to them, with prayers in our hearts that the Lord will use us as a means of His hands to punish them for their crimes.

This morning the bodies will be sent to St. George in charge of Bro. Moody. Fourteen men are just starting to Kanab to strengthen that place.

Our company has moved back this morning to Pipe Springs, where head quarters are established for the present.

We have heard nothing from Peter Shirts, but expect to go to his place as soon as the supplies come up. And, if he still lives, we shall bring him in; if dead, pay the last respects to his remains.

We intend starting a detachment of 30 men to bury the Indians killed, and to follow Indians we suppose to have gone south.

We are expecting the supplies we sent for, and as soon as they come up, we shall put our plans in execution. The men are in good health and spirits.

We shall keep you posted concerning our movements, at every opportunity and we shall be pleased to receive the news from home by you. Please let Bro. Gardner and the brethren see this.

(signed) Daniel D. McArthur, Col. Commanding  
John D. L. Pearce, Aid-de-camp.

The bodies of Whitmore and McIntire were found about 4 miles S. E. of Whitmore Herd House, at 10:00 A. M. on Saturday, 20th January, 1866.

submitted from the James G. Bleak journal  
submitted by Rudger M. McArthur

\* \* \* \* \*

A Visit with Vere and Evelyn McMullin

Vere McMullin is the son of Miranda McArthur McMullin. Vere's wife, Evelyn, spent considerable time during the latter part of Ran's life caring for her.

The following story has been related many times through the years in McMullin and McArthur family gatherings.

Ran was ill with Bryce Disease. Evelyn was taking care of her and relates that Ran had not spoken for ten days. Ran

was an easy patient to care for, always sweet, never fought anyone and sometimes mumbled to herself.

On this special day her brothers; Moroni, James, Duncan and Wilford had traveled to Leeds to see Ran. When the brothers arrived they were greeted by Vere, Evelyn and Evelyn's father, Riley C. Savage. As this group were visiting around the bed, Ran began mumbling to herself when all at once she said, "There's my father. What are you doing here? I can't go yet, I can't go till Lynn gets here and I want to talk with him." After a short pause she said, "There's my mother, no I can't go yet, Lynn will be here Thursday." Those surrounding the bed were surprised to say the least. They saw no one in the room and were just getting adjusted to the surroundings when Ran raised up in her bed and said, "Well Ira, what are you doing here?" Uncle Ira McMullin had died two days previous to this incident. No one had told Ran, not even whispered about Ira's death in her presence. She mentioned her father and mother three times in the next few minutes as if carrying on a conversation with them, always in the context: "There is my mother and father. What are they doing here?" Evelyn and Vere both said, "We knew that she had visited with people behind the veil."

Ran's son, Lynn, arrived Thursday as anticipated and went to see his mother. He talked to her. Neither Vere nor Evelyn knew whether or not his mother talked to him. Miranda McArthur McMullin died April 30, 1932, within an hour after Lynn arrived in Leeds and talked to his mother.

We visited on about various things; apricots, pickled grapes, Dixie wine, and then the subject returned to the D. D. McArthur family experiences.

Vere said he enjoyed going to Grandpa McArthur's house after he had been there a few minutes. But the first thing he had to endure was being kissed by the three women

(Matilda Caroline, Elizabeth Bullock and Mary Frances; the three wives of D. D.).

It was fun when he stayed overnight in St. George and slept in feather beds that "came up all around me when I would climb up on them." Vere always wondered where all the feathers came from to make the feather mattresses and pillows used by the McArthur family.

Vere used to admire the matched team of horses and the white topped buggy that were kept in the McArthur barn. Everyone knew that the team and buggy were to be transportation to take Grandpa McArthur and company to the Temple at the New Jerusalem.

Dinner time at the McArthur house was always a time for kneeling and bowing over chairs at the dinner table. Vere remembered the table being longer than the livingroom in his home in Leeds. When Grandpa started to pray, Uncles Wilford and Art would sneak out and do something, he never knew what, but they always made it back for the 'Amen' which he remembered came at the end of a thirty minute prayer. Did D. D. ever say anything to the boys? No! To chastise the boys would be admitting that he (D. D.) was not bowed reverently with his eyes closed.

Vere attended the funeral for Daniel Duncan McArthur and remembered that the Tabernacle was filled to overflowing with people stacked up on both stairs outside. He was impressed with the fact that so many of the people attending the funeral were Indians.

\* \* \* \* \*

Daniel Duncan McArthur - born 8 April 1820

Wives:

Cordilia Clark                      born: 1825  
     married: 14 June 1841  
 Child:  
     Andrew McArthur                      23 Dec. 1842

Matilda Caroline Fuller        born: 1 May 1820  
     married: 14 Dec. 1845

Children:  
     Daniel D. McArthur Jr.              17 Aug. 1848  
     Hannah Susan McArthur            1 Aug. 1850  
     Emma Matilda McArthur             8 Aug. 1852  
     Caroline McArthur                  28 Feb. 1858  
     Edward Meeks McArthur             20 Mar. 1860  
     Mahala McArthur                     11 May 1862

Elizabeth Bullock                born: 22 Sept. 1842  
     married: 13 Feb. 1858

Children:  
     Eugenia McArthur                    4 Dec. 1860  
     George McArthur                    16 Jun. 1866  
     Isabelle McArthur                  13 Jul. 1868  
     James McArthur                     29 Jan. 1871  
     Emeline McArthur                  24 Feb. 1874  
     Moroni McArthur                    25 Apr. 1877

Mary Hill                            born: 25 Jan. 1841  
     married: 13 Feb. 1858

Children:  
     Margaret McArthur                  24 Dec. 1861  
     Maranda McArthur                  16 Jul. 1865  
     Experience McArthur                14 Dec. 1868

Mary Frances Calloway        born: 31 Jan. 1854  
     married: 10 Apr. 1871

Children:  
     Sybil McArthur                      23 Dec. 1872  
     Duncan McArthur                    10 Aug. 1875  
     Levi McArthur                        8 Sep. 1879  
     Wilford Woodruff McArthur        30 Apr. 1884  
     Arthur McArthur                    12 May 1886  
     Ellen McArthur                      19 Apr. 1890



# **BLESSINGS**

A Blessing by John Smith, Patriarch, upon the head of Daniel D. McArthur, Son of Duncan of Susan. Born April 8th, 1820, Erie County, New York. Mr. Daniel, we lay our hands upon thy head in the name of Jesus of Nazareth and Seal a Fathers Blessing upon you for I Speak in the name of thy Father and we seal upon you all the Blessings of the new and Everlasting Covenant. Thou art of the House of Jacob through the Loines of Ephriam and a lawful heir to the Priesthood which hath power over all things in Heaven and in Earth eaven to bring to pass the Resurrection of the Dead this power and Priesthood Shall be Sealed upon the in due time with all the keys and Mysteries of the Same. Thou art cauld to hunt up the Remnants of Jacob and to push them together from the ends of the Earth. Thou Shalt have wisdome to Counfound the wise and the learned of this Generation and put them to Shame. He that rises up against the Shall fall in his own Smair no weapen that is framed against thee Shall prosper nor a hair of thy head shall ever fall by an Enemy for the Lord hath given his anjels charge to Defend thy cause at all times to Break the Bares of Iron and Cut the Gates of Brass asunder: Thou Shalt gether thy thousands from evry nation when thy lot is cast and be able to lead them to Zion with vast Stores of Riches. Thou Shalt be able to do eny meracle that wisdome will direct when it is necessary for the salvation of the Children of men or the moveing forward the cause of Zion. Thou Shalt be blest in thy Family with health peace and plenty. Shall have a numerous Posterity to bear thy name in Remembrance in the Church forever. Shalt live if you desire it with a perfect heart to see the closing scene of this generation and pertake of all the Blessings of the Redeemers Kingdom wourlds without end. In as much as thou art faithful in they calling my Son and listen to Council these words shall not fail for these are the words of thy Father in common with thy Companion Sealed upon thee by the authority of the Priesthood Amen

My Companions Blessing Read as follows  
City of Joseph August 26th 1845

A Blessing by John Smith, Patriarch, upon the head of Matilda C. Fuller, Daughter of Edwan M. and Hannah. Born May 1st, 1820, Providence, Saratoga Co, New York. Sister Matilda I lay my hands upon thy head in the name of Jesus of Nazareth and by the authorty given me to bless the Fatherless I place upon you all the blessings of the new and everlasting Covenant in as much as thou hast obeyed the Gospel and left they Fathers House and all thy former friends in the midst of persecution it is thy privlage to attain unto all the blessings of the new and everlasting Covenant for thou art of the House of Joseph and Shalt have an indowment in the Lords House. Thou Shalt be exalted to a knowledge of the misteries of the Priesthood learn misteries that have been kept hid from before the foundations of the wourld. Thou Shalt be a mother in the House of Israel and Shall attain to all the blessings which the Lord hath in store for his Saints and hold an honorable Standing in his Church forever, and thou shalt Raise up Sones and Daughters that Shalt be excelent among those who hold the Priesthood. Thou shalt have exceeding great faith at thy Rebuke the Sick Shall be heald and thy Habitation Shall be a Dwelling place of peace health and plenty. And thou Shalt see thy Relations and friends embracing the truth and obeying the Gospel and rejoicing in the words of the new and everlasting Covanant you Shall enjoy evry blessing which you desire in Riteausness shall forget all thy sorrows and your joy Shall be full. Shalt live to see the Closing Scene of this Generation and if your faith does not fail and you keep yourself unspotted from the wourld not a word which I have Spoken Shall fail and I Seal you up to Eternal life Amen.

St. George, June 9, 1872

A Patricarchal Blessing by Wm. G. Perkins on the head of Daniel Duncan McArthur, Son of Duncan and, Susan McArthur. Born in the State of New York, April 8, 1820.

Brther Daniel, I place my hands upon your head. I seal upon you a Fathers Blessing. Your lineage is that of Joseph through the lions of Ephraim and a lawful Heir to all the blessings and privileges of the Holy Gospel.

Your Father is very kind and has great respect for you. He gave you your name and blest you, and sent you to this earth to receive a body. Your name is rejestered in the Lambs book of life. There it will remain worlds without end. He gave you a long blessing and only a small portion of it has been fulfilled, You will fulfil every word of it.

You have a great work and a glorious work to preform, and in due time you will be called and chosen and set apart to preach the Gospel unto the lost sheep of the House of Israel. You will have great power with them. They will fall down at your feet to worship you. You will say unto them, Arise, and worship God who made the Heavens and the Earth. You will say unto them I am thy fellow servant. I am come to preach glad tidings of great joy unto you. Then the Holy Ghost will rest down upon you as the rushing of a mighty wind. Then your tongue will be loosed, you will preach unto them in their own language. You will understand every word that you say unto them. There you will see a nation born in a day. Then you will see a great display of the power of God. You will gather up a mighty host and go to the Centre Stake of Zion. You will then go with your army and cross the Mississippi River, and tread down and tear down every thing that appose you. And when the Lord shall say it is enough, you will then return to the Centre Stake of Zion.

There you will assist in building a Holy Temple, there will be your inheritance. You will assist in building up the New Jerusalem. Whose streets will be paved with pure gold. You will do a great work in tha Holy Temple for yourself and your dead. It will be common with you to see the graves open and the dead come forth. The Angles of God will be your constant companion by day and by night. You will witness the return of the ten tribes - and be presant when Ephraim is crowned. You will witness the return of your Redeemer, and be there when He comes to receive his Holy Temple. There you will see a great display of the power of God. You will see a Cloud rest upon that Temple by day and a pillar of fire by night.

And I seal these blessings of life, health and strength upon your body, that you may run and not be weary and walk and never faint. And I seal you up unto eternal life that you may be with the saints through out the thousand years reign on this earth. I seal upon your head a Crown of Celestial Glory. This I do in the name of the Father, Son and Holy Ghost, Amen.

St. George June 9, 1872

A Patriochal Blessing by Wm G. Perkins on the head of Matilda C. McArthur, daughter of Edward and Hannah Fuller. Born in the State of New York May 1st, 1820.

Matiilda, the beloved of the Lord, in the name of Jesus I place my hands upon your head and seal upon you a father's blessing. Your lineage is of Joseph through the loins of Ephraim.

And you are a lawful heiress to all the blessings and privileges of the Holy Gospel. Father sent his Holy Angles to witness your baptism into this kingdom. You had a witness and a testimony there and then that this was the Kingdom of God. Your father did not send you here to be

alone, but sent your true mate. He told you to multiply and help to replenish the earth. He gave you a long blessing and you will fulfil it with a glad heart. Your countenance will be full of the Holy Ghost. Your name is registered in the Lambs book of life. There it will remain for ever. You are true to your trust and true to your friends. The Lord thy God delighteth in you because your heart is pure and contrite before him. You have been wading a little in deep water, but thy father is with thee and he will bring thee safe to shore. You will have a beautiful mansion prepared for you. You will keep it in the best of order. Your table will be spread with the rich bounties of the earth, it will be your delight to feed the sons of Joseph. Holy Angels will visit you in your mansion. You will feed them and lodge them, you will know them as old friends, you will talk together face to face, you will understand, and comprehend every word they say.

They will touch you with a Holy touch that will run through your whole system. They will acquaint you of your dead. They will tell you how many have believed the gospel. They will give you their names, ages, and birth places and in due time you will go into the Temple of our God and go through all the ordinances of that house for yourself and your dead.

You will assist with your own hands in helping to build that Temple.

You will be there and see your redeemer coming with power and great glory to receive his Holy Temple. You will be caught up to meet him and be with him at the dedication of that Temple.

You will be at that great feast, even the marriage supper of the Lamb. You will sit down and partake of the rich bounties thereof. There you will see the wounds that your Redeemer received on Mount Calvary if you desire it. You

can thrust your hand into his side, then you will see a great display of the power of God.

I seal all these blessings upon you and seal you up unto eternal life, and seal upon your head a Crown of Celestial Glory. This I do in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ your Redeemer.

Amen.